

SWIFT'S
GULLIVER'S
TRAVELS

FT MEADE
GenColl



Class PZ3

Book .S9765 G

33

Copyright N^o

COPYRIGHT DEPOSIT.

GULLIVER'S TRAVELS

Macmillan's Pocket American and English Classics.

*A Series of English Texts, edited for use in Secondary Schools,
with Critical Introductions, Notes, etc.*

16mo.

Cloth.

25c. each.

Addison's Sir Roger de Coverley.
Browning's Shorter Poems.
Browning, Mrs., Poems (Selected).
Burke's Speech on Conciliation.
Byron's Childe Harold's Pilgrimage.
Byron's Shorter Poems.
Carlyle's Essay on Burns.
Chaucer's Prologue and Knight's Tale.
Coleridge's The Ancient Mariner.
Cooper's The Deerslayer.
Cooper's The Last of the Mohicans.
De Quincey's Confessions of an
English Opium-Eater.
Dryden's Palamon and Arcite.
Early American Orations, 1760-1824.
Edwards' (Jonathan) Sermons.
Eliot's Silas Marner.
Epoch-making Papers in U. S. History.
Franklin's Autobiography.
Goldsmith's The Vicar of Wakefield.
Hawthorne's Twice-told Tales (Sele-
tions from).
Irving's Life of Goldsmith.
Irving's The Alhambra.
Irving's Sketch Book.
Longfellow's Evangeline.
Lowell's The Vision of Sir Launfal.
Macaulay's Essay on Addison.
Macaulay's Essay on Hastings.
Macaulay's Essay on Lord Clive.
Macaulay's Essay on Milton.

Macaulay's Lays of Ancient Rome.
Macaulay's Life of Samuel Johnson.
Milton's Comus and Other Poems.
Milton's Paradise Lost, Bks. I and II.
Old English Ballads.
Palgrave's Golden Treasury.
Plutarch's Lives (Cæsar, Brutus, and
Mark Antony).
Poe's Poems.
Poe's Prose Tales (Selections from).
Pope's Homer's Iliad.
Ruskin's Sesame and Lilies.
Scott's Ivanhoe.
Scott's Lady of the Lake.
Scott's Lay of the Last Minstrel.
Scott's Marmion.
Shakespeare's As You Like It.
Shakespeare's Hamlet.
Shakespeare's Julius Cæsar.
Shakespeare's Macbeth.
Shakespeare's Merchant of Venice.
Shakespeare's Twelfth Night.
Shelley and Keats: Poems.
Southern Poets: Selections.
Spenser's Faerie Queene, Book I.
Stevenson's Treasure Island.
Tennyson's Idylls of the King.
Tennyson's The Princess.
Tennyson's Shorter Poems.
Woolman's Journal.
Wordsworth's Shorter Poems.

OTHERS TO FOLLOW.



GULLIVER AND THE HOUYHNHNMS

(See page 179)

GULLIVER'S TRAVELS

INTO SEVERAL REMOTE NATIONS OF
THE WORLD

BY

JONATHAN SWIFT

EDITED, WITH NOTES AND AN INTRODUCTION

BY

CLIFTON JOHNSON



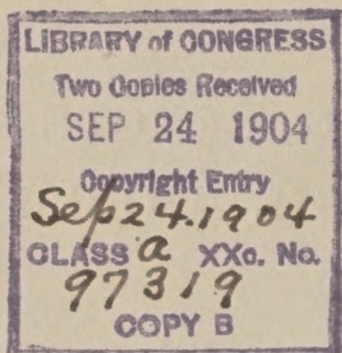
New York

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

LONDON: MACMILLAN & CO., LTD.

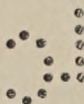
1904

All rights reserved



COPYRIGHT, 1904,
BY THE MACMILLAN COMPANY.

Set up and electrotyped. Published September, 1904.



Norwood Press
J. S. Cushing & Co. — Berwick & Smith Co.
Norwood, Mass., U.S.A.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
Introduction	vii

PART I

VOYAGE TO LILLIPUT

CHAPTER I

The Author gives some Account of Himself and Family — His First Inducements to Travel — He is Shipwrecked, and Swims for his Life — Gets safe on Shore in the Country of Lilliput — Is made a Prisoner	1
---	---

CHAPTER II

The Emperor of Lilliput, attended by several of the Nobility, comes to see the Author in his Confinement — The Em- peror's Person and Costume described — Learned Men appointed to teach the Author their Language — He gains Favor by his mild Disposition — His Pockets are searched, and his Sword and Pistols taken from him	11
---	----

CHAPTER III

The Author entertains the Emperor, and his Nobility of both sexes, in a very uncommon manner — The Diversions of the Court of Lilliput described — The Author has his Liberty granted to him upon certain conditions	20
---	----

CHAPTER IV

	PAGE
Mildendo, the metropolis of Lilliput, described, together with the Emperor's Palace — A conversation between the Author and a Principal Secretary concerning the affairs of that Empire — The Author's offers to serve the Emperor in his wars	28

CHAPTER V

The Author, by an extraordinary stratagem, prevents an Invasion — A high Title is conferred upon him — Ambassadors arrive from the Emperor of Blefuscu, and sue for Peace	33
---	----

CHAPTER VI

Of the Inhabitants of Lilliput; their Learning, Laws, and Customs; the Manner of Educating their Children — The Author's way of living in that Country	38
--	----

CHAPTER VII

The Author, being informed of a Design to accuse him of High-treason, makes his Escape to Blefuscu — His Reception there	45
--	----

CHAPTER VIII

The Author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuscu; and after some difficulties, returns safe to his native Country	52
---	----

PART II

A VOYAGE TO BROBDINGNAG

CHAPTER I

	PAGE
A great Storm ; the Long-boat sent to fetch water, the Author goes with it to discover the Country — He is left on shore, is seized by one of the natives, and carried to a Farmer's House — His reception, with several Accidents that happened there — A Description of the Inhabitants . . .	61

CHAPTER II

A Description of the Farmer's Daughter — The Author carried to a Market-town, and then to the Metropolis — The Particulars of his Journey	71
---	----

CHAPTER III

The Author is sent for to Court — The Queen buys him of his master the Farmer, and presents him to the King — He disputes with his Majesty's great Scholars — An Apartment at Court provided for the Author — He is in high favor with the Queen — He defends the honor of his own Country — He quarrels with the Queen's Dwarf . . .	77
---	----

CHAPTER IV

The Country described — A proposal for correcting modern Maps — The King's Palace, and some account of the Metropolis — The Author's way of travelling — The chief Temple	87
---	----

CHAPTER V

	PAGE
Several Adventures that happened to the Author — The Author shows his skill in Navigation	92

CHAPTER VI

Several contrivances of the Author to please the King and Queen — He shows his skill in Music — The King inquires into the state of England, which the Author relates to him — The King's observations thereon	100
--	-----

CHAPTER VII

The Author's love of his Country — He makes a proposal of much advantage to the King, which is rejected — The King's great ignorance in Politics — The Learning of that Country very imperfect and confined — Their Laws, and Military Affairs, and Parties in the State	106
--	-----

CHAPTER VIII

The King and Queen make a progress to the frontiers — The Author attends them — The manner in which he leaves the Country very particularly related — He returns to England	112
---	-----

PART III

A VOYAGE TO LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGG-NAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIBB, AND JAPAN

CHAPTER I

The Author sets out on his third Voyage — Is taken by Pirates — The malice of a Dutchman — His arrival at an Island — He is received into Laputa	127
--	-----

CHAPTER II

	PAGE
The Humors and Dispositions of the Laputians described — An account of their Learning — Of the King and his Court — The Author's reception there — The Inhabitants subject to fears and disquietudes — A Description of the Flying Island — The King's method of suppressing In- surrections	133

CHAPTER III

The Author leaves Laputa, is conveyed to Balnibarbi, arrives at the Metropolis — A Description of the Metropolis and the Country adjoining — The Author hospitably received by a great Lord — His conversation with that Lord	142
--	-----

CHAPTER IV

The Author permitted to see the Grand Academy of Lagado — The Academy described — The Arts wherein the Pro- fessors employ themselves	148
---	-----

CHAPTER V

The Author leaves Lagado — Arrives at Maldonada — No ship ready — He takes a short voyage to Glubbubdribb — His reception by the Governor	154
---	-----

CHAPTER VI

The Author's return to Maldonada — Sails to the Kingdom of Luggnagg — The Author confined — He is sent for to Court — The manner of his Admittance — The King's great Lenity to his Subjects	159
---	-----

CHAPTER VII

	PAGE
The Luggnaggians commended — A particular Description of the Struldbrugs, with many Conversations between the Author and some eminent Persons upon that subject — The Author leaves Luggnagg, and sails to Japan — Thence he goes in a Dutch ship to Amsterdam, and from Amsterdam to England	163

PART IV

A VOYAGE TO THE COUNTRY OF
THE HOUYHNNHNS

CHAPTER I

The Author sets out as Captain of a Ship — His Men conspire against him — Confine him a long time to his Cabin — Set him on shore in an Unknown Land — He travels up into the Country — The Yahoos, a strange sort of Animal, described — The Author meets two Houyhnhnms	175
---	-----

CHAPTER II

The Author conducted by a Houyhnhnm to his House — The House described — The Author's reception — The Food of the Houyhnhnms — The Author's manner of feeding in this Country	182
---	-----

CHAPTER III

The Author studies to learn the Language — The Houyhnhnm, his Master, assists in teaching him — The Language described — Several Houyhnhnms of quality come out of curiosity to see the Author — He gives his Master a short account of his Voyage	188
--	-----

CHAPTER IV

	PAGE
The Houyhnhnms' notion of Truth and Falsehood — The Author's discourse disapproved by his Master — The Author gives a more particular account of himself, and the Accidents of his Voyage	192

CHAPTER V

The Author, at his Master's command, informs him of England — The causes of war among the Princes of Europe — The Author explains the condition of England under Queen Anne	197
---	-----

CHAPTER VI

The Author's great Love of his native Country — His Master's observations upon the Constitution and Administration of England, as described by the Author, with Parallel Cases and Comparisons — His Master's observations upon Human Nature	204
--	-----

CHAPTER VII

The Author relates several Particulars of the Yahoos — The great Virtues of the Houyhnhnms — The Education and Exercise of their Youth — Their General Assembly	209
---	-----

CHAPTER VIII

A grand debate at the General Assembly of the Houyhnhnms — The Learning of the Houyhnhnms — Their Buildings — Their Manner of Burial — The Defectiveness of their Language	212
--	-----

CHAPTER IX

	PAGE
The Author's happy Life among the Houyhnhnms — His great improvement in Virtue by conversing with them — Their Conversations — The Author has notice given him by his Master that he must depart from the Country — He falls into a swoon for grief, but submits — He contrives and finishes a Canoe by the help of a fellow-servant, and puts to sea at a venture	217

CHAPTER X

The Author's dangerous Voyage — He arrives at New Holland — Is wounded with an arrow by one of the Natives — Is seized, and carried by force into a Portuguese ship — The great civilities of the Captain — The Author arrives in England	222
---	-----

CHAPTER XI

The Author's Veracity — His Censure of those Travellers who swerve from the Truth — The Author clears himself from any sinister ends in writing — The method of planting Colonies — The right of the Crown to those Countries described by the Author — The Difficulty of conquering them — The Author takes his last leave of the Reader — Proposeth his Manner of Living for the future — Gives good Advice and concludes	230
---	-----

INTRODUCTION

JONATHAN SWIFT, better known to fame as "Dean" Swift, was born on November 30, 1667, in a humble section of Dublin. He was, however, of English parentage, and his father was a cousin of the poet Dryden. The father died shortly before his son's birth, and Mrs. Swift and her two children were for many years afterward largely dependent on the aid given them by her husband's brother Godwin.

At the age of six Swift began his schooling, and when he was fourteen he entered Trinity College, Dublin. He did not shine as a student; for he wasted much of his time in desultory reading, and his attention was more absorbed in writing personal satires and political rhymes than in winning academical honors. Worse than that, he belonged to a clique of undergraduates remarkable for its turbulent irregularities and breaches of college discipline.

His college course still lacked something of completion when it was brought to a sudden close by the business failure of his uncle Godwin. This uncle was a lawyer in excellent practice, but unfortunate speculations ruined him, and he ultimately died insane. Soon after leaving college Swift went to England, where he found employment as secretary to Sir William Temple, a distant relative of his mother's. His duties were not very exacting, and he had a good deal of time at his own disposal. This leisure was not wasted, and he became a serious student, and devoted many hours daily to an extensive course of reading. So closely did he apply himself that he undermined his health,

and brought on fits of dizziness and deafness. He was subject to the return of these spells at intervals all the rest of his life.

In 1694 Swift decided to enter the Church. A living in the north of Ireland, near Belfast, worth one hundred pounds a year, was obtained for him ; but he found the region to which he was assigned dull and little to his liking. Besides, his conduct was such as to provoke scandal in the neighborhood, which made the situation the more uncomfortable. Presently there came a letter from Sir William Temple, begging his former secretary to return. He greatly missed his society and assistance. But Swift did not decide to accept this invitation until in one of his walks he chanced to meet a brother clergyman, who confided to him that he was a curate with a wife and eight children to support on a salary of forty pounds a year ; nor had he any hope of promotion. When Swift heard this he promptly journeyed to Dublin, resigned his own position, and secured the appointment of the poor curate in his place. Swift was often accounted harsh and misanthropic, but this is one of many instances where his sympathies responded nobly to want and suffering.

For the next two years he acted as Sir William Temple's secretary, the connection ending with that gentleman's death in 1699. By the terms of Sir William's will, Swift was made heir to a considerable sum of money, and, as he was prudent and even in some ways niggardly, he never was in want again as long as he lived.

Shortly after his patron's death Swift went to Dublin as the secretary of Lord Berkeley. Aside from the ordinary duties of his position, it fell to his lot to entertain Lady Berkeley, rather oftener than was to his liking, by reading aloud to her. As it happened she had a "pious love of sermons," and her favorite book was a ponderous volume of Boyle's *Discourses*. One day Swift amused himself by substituting a production of his own, written strictly in the style of Boyle, which he called a "Meditation on a Broomstick." His manuscript was easily concealed in

the big volume of sermons, and the imposition was not detected. The good Lady Berkeley listened attentively, remarking on the singularity of the subject, but praising the discourse to her visitors. It ran in this wise :

“ This single stick, which you now behold ingloriously lying in that neglected corner, I once knew in a flourishing state in a forest : it was full of sap, full of leaves, and full of boughs ; but now, in vain does the busy art of man pretend to vie with nature, by tying that withered bundle of twigs to its sapless trunk : it is now, at best, but the reverse of what it was, a tree turned upside down, the branches on the earth, and the root in the air ; it is now handled by every dirty wench, condemned to do her drudgery, and, by a capricious kind of fate, destined to make other things clean, and be nasty itself : at length worn to the stump in the service of the maids, it is either thrown out of doors, or condemned to the last use, of kindling a fire. When I beheld this I sighed, and said within myself, *Surely man is a Broomstick !* Nature sent him into the world strong and lusty, in a thriving condition, wearing his own hair on his head, the proper branches of this reasoning vegetable, until the axe of intemperance has lopped off his green boughs, and left him a withered trunk : he then flies to art, and puts on a periwig, valuing himself upon an unnatural abundance of hairs (all covered with powder) that never grew on his head ; but now, should this our broomstick enter the scene, proud of those birchen spoils it never bore, and all covered with dust, though the sweepings of the finest lady’s chamber, we should be apt to ridicule and despise its vanity. Partial judges that we are of our own excellences and other men’s defaults !

“ But a broomstick, perhaps you will say, is an emblem of a tree standing on its head ; and pray what is man, but a topsy-turvy creature, his animal faculties perpetually mounted on his rational, his head where his heels should be, grovelling on the earth ! and yet, with all his faults, he sets up to be a universal

reformer and corrector of abuses, a remover of grievances, rakes into every corner of nature, bringing hidden corruption to the light, and raises a mighty dust where there was none before ; sharing deeply all the while in the very same pollutions he pretends to sweep away ; till, worn out to the stumps, like his brother besom, he is either kicked out of doors or made use of to kindle flames for others to warm themselves by."

Swift returned to England in 1701, and soon found himself deeply engaged in politics, at first on the side of the Whigs and later on that of the Tories. He was the most powerful and trenchant writer of his day, and he did important service, for which he expected to be proportionately rewarded. But the way to high position was blocked by the enemies he had made by his reckless pen, which never stopped at personalities, and which had handled religion so freely as to raise doubts as to his belief in Christianity. After long years of waiting he had to be content with the appointment, in 1713, to the not very desirable Deanery of St. Patrick's in Dublin.

The new dean was hardly more welcome in Ireland as a church prelate than he would have been in England, but there was a change in his favor later. Ireland had received small consideration at the hands of the English, its manufacturing had been ruined, and poverty and misery were almost universal. Moved by this suffering, Swift espoused the Irish cause. It was not any partiality to Ireland that influenced him to become its champion. Neither the country nor its society were congenial to his tastes, and it was a source of vexation to him that he chanced to be Irish born. Indeed, he always took pains to explain that his parents were English, and that therefore he was no Irishman. But when he contemplated the unhappy condition of the land of his birth, his humanity and sense of justice were touched, and with courageous ardor he threw himself into the struggle.

His most notable contribution to the cause was a series of

letters that purported to be written by a Dublin tradesman, and which he published over the signature of M. B. Drapier. They were partisan appeals, extravagant and one-sided, as was nearly everything Swift wrote ; but they were effective, and resulted in some much-needed reforms. The letters at once raised the wrath of the government, and large rewards were offered for the exposure of their author. There could have been no trouble in learning that Swift was responsible for them, but, as he says, "not a traitor could be found to sell him." The printer was put under arrest, but even he had to be released, for no condemnatory action against him could be carried through the Irish courts.

As for Swift, he became thenceforward the idol of the common people throughout Ireland. They almost worshipped him. In truth, their faith in him was so unbounded that when, on the occasion of an eclipse, he took it into his head to cause the bellman to go through Dublin's chief streets and proclaim that the eclipse had been postponed by order of the Dean, the crowds which had gathered to await the event promptly dispersed. On his return from a visit to England, in 1726, he was welcomed, like a prince, with triumphal processions and bonfires. It was a rare thing in the experience of the downtrodden populace to find a man in authority who would take an honest interest in their welfare, instead of robbing them.

A strange phase of Swift's life is that during many years he loved, or professed to love, two accomplished ladies. There is some reason to think that he finally married one of them privately, but he never declared his marriage, and both ladies died broken-hearted.

As old age came on Swift concerned himself less and less in public affairs ; death gradually diminished the circle of his near friends till they were all gone, and his last years were passed in broken health and loneliness. A mental disorder increasingly afflicted him, his memory failed, and at length he sank into a

state of lethargic stupidity, motionless, heedless, and speechless. He died in 1745.

In personal appearance Swift was tall, robust, and well formed, with blue, expressive eyes, dark, heavy eyebrows, and a nose inclined to be aquiline. He was considered handsome in youth, and in his mature years his figure is described as noble and imposing. He was a fluent speaker, ever ready at reply and retort, and his tongue was dreaded no less than his pen by intimates who incurred his displeasure. Yet his conversation was full of charm, and the originality of his humor, his keenness of observation, and the fund of anecdotes at his command made him a companion whose society was everywhere sought. He delighted in puns and quick-witted repartée, and even in practical jokes.

One of the most famous of his jokes was perpetrated on a man named Partridge, who professed to be an astrologer and who every year issued a prophetic almanac. It presently occurred to Swift to take the nom de plume of Isaac Bickerstaff, and put forth some predictions of his own. The chief point in them was that he prophesied the death of Partridge at a certain hour on a certain day. In due time a letter appeared purporting to be written by some one who saw Partridge die. Naturally Partridge was indignant. In his next year's almanac he denounced the impostor Bickerstaff; but this only resulted in the latter's maintaining that his prophecy had been verified by the event, and that the real impostor was this person going about claiming to be Partridge. The hoax at the time greatly amused every one but its victim, who took the matter in serious earnest. Swift seems to have had no motive for the part he played save to divert himself.

Another incident which shows the play of Swift's humor has to do with an occasion when in travelling he stopped to give his horse water at a brook which crossed the road. A stranger who had paused for the same purpose saluted the Dean, and he

returned the courtesy. They parted, but the gentleman, struck by the Dean's figure, sent his servant back to inquire who the Dean was. The messenger rode up to Swift and said, "Please, sir, master would be obliged if you would tell him who you are."

"Willingly," replied the Dean; "tell your master I am the person who bowed to him when we were giving our horses water at the brook yonder."

After the publication of the *Drapier Letters* Swift became so popular that he was always followed by a crowd whenever he appeared in the streets of Dublin. He used to say that the Irish ought to subscribe and purchase him a stock of hats, for his own was worn out by the number of salutes he had to return.

Many anecdotes are related of his interchange of slang with the glib-tongued shoeblacks and beggars of the city, but these are of doubtful authenticity; for, like all celebrated jesters, it was Swift's fate to be accounted the author of every joke, good and bad, perpetrated in his day.

Swift was famous for his epigrams. Here is one referring to the fact that he bequeathed his property to found a hospital for idiots and lunatics:

"He gave the little wealth he had
To build a house for fools and mad;
To show by one satiric touch,
No nation wanted it so much."

Another epigram, in which Swift reflected on the mental capacity of a sergeant at law named Bettsworth, came near having disastrous results for its author. Its subject was so enraged that he threatened the Dean with violence. But this only reacted to his own hurt, for the inhabitants of St. Patrick's district formed an association to defend their beloved Dean, and the unfortunate lawyer could hardly venture on the streets with safety.

An epigram was Swift's last composition. It was written in

one of the lucid moments near the end of his final dark years. He had been taken out by his physician for a drive, and had inquired the purpose of a recently erected building that he had not seen before. "That," replied the physician, "is the magazine of arms and powder for the security of the city."

"Oh, ho!" said the Dean, and he pulled out his pocket-book and wrote these lines:

"Behold a proof of Irish sense!

Here Irish wit is seen!

When nothing's left that's worth defence,

We build a magazine."

In his writings Swift's primary aim was neither profit nor the production of literature. Some personal, ecclesiastical, or political motive was the germ of nearly all of them. He was unsparing in his sarcasm and ridicule, and the caustic flow never ceased as long as he was able to write. He put no trust in human nature, and mankind's falsity and pettiness were themes he constantly dwelt on. His regard for himself was no higher than that he entertained for the rest of the world. He had no joy in living, and he had the strange habit of observing the anniversary of his birth as a day of fasting and sadness.

He has been thought by many to have been wholly bitter, selfish, and unfeeling, but he had another side. He was devoted to his mother as long as she lived, his friends were indebted to him for many kindnesses, and he was known on occasion to do a good turn for an enemy. His private benevolences in Dublin in his later years were immense. One of his servants, whom he had long kept in spite of very marked inefficiency, he summarily dismissed and never forgave because he insolently refused to attend to the request of a needy old woman.

Swift's style as a writer was masterly in its simplicity and vigor. He often expressed himself coarsely, but never with affectation, and what he says has an ease and a directness that have rarely been equalled. The work by which he is best known

is of course his *Gulliver's Travels*. A few years before this masterpiece was published *Robinson Crusoe* had appeared, and the influence of De Foe's great romance can be plainly traced. The fictitious narrators are in each case plain seafaring men who have been wrecked and cast away in distant and little-known parts of the world, and their stories are told in the same homely manner, and gain an air of fact by the recital of many minute and trifling circumstances. But in the case of *Gulliver's Travels* the book has a hidden meaning. Most of it is a satire on the politicians of the day and their methods, but the final portion derides mankind in general.

Its publication, in 1727, was hailed with mingled merriment and amazement, and Gulliver's story had on its surface such an appearance of veracity that in some quarters it was more than half believed. Swift concealed his own authorship, and prefaced the volume with the letter of one Richard Sympson, who vouches for the reality of Mr. Gulliver, and declares that he is highly esteemed at his home near Newark in Nottinghamshire, and that his veracity was such that it had become "a sort of proverb among his neighbors, when any one affirmed a thing, to say, 'It is as true as if Mr. Gulliver had spoken it.'"

All this sounded so ingenuous and plausible that some people journeyed up to Nottinghamshire to see Mr. Gulliver. They were vastly disappointed to find neither him nor any Mr. Sympson, and at length the book was accepted for what it is — one of the most entertaining fictions ever written.

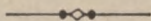
NOTE

In condensing *Gulliver's Travels* for school use, omissions have been made of all matter that was objectionable because of coarseness, and also of portions of trifling interest that interrupted the flow of the story. Certain verbal errors have been corrected and occasional obsolete words modernized; but the text is essentially Swift's own, and is in no wise rewritten.

PART I

A VOYAGE TO LILLIPUT

A VOYAGE TO LILLIPUT°



CHAPTER I

The Author gives some Account of Himself and Family — His First Inducements to Travel — He is Shipwrecked, and Swims for his Life — Gets safe on Shore in the Country of Lilliput — Is made a Prisoner.

My father had a small estate in Nottinghamshire. I was the third of five sons. He sent me to Emanuel College in Cambridge, at fourteen years old, where I resided three years, and, applied myself closely to my studies ; but the charge of maintaining me, being too great for a narrow fortune, I was bound apprentice to Mr. James Bates, an eminent surgeon in London, with whom I continued four years. My father now and then sent me small sums of money, which I laid out in learning navigation, and other things useful to those who intend to travel, as I always believed it would be, some time or other, my fortune to do. When I left Mr. Bates I went to my father, and, by the assistance of him and my uncle John, and some other relations, I got forty pounds, and a promise of thirty pounds a-year, to maintain me at Leyden.° There I studied physic two years and seven months, knowing it would be useful in long voyages.

Soon after my return from Leyden, I was recommended by my good master, Mr. Bates, to be surgeon to the *Swallow*, Captain Abraham Pannell, commander; with whom I continued three years and a half, making a voyage or two into the Levant,^o and some other parts. When I came back I resolved to settle in London; to which Mr. Bates, my master, encouraged me; and by him I was recommended to several patients. I took part of a small house, and married Miss Mary Burton, second daughter to Mr. Edmund Burton, hosier.

But my good master Bates dying in two years after, and I having few friends, my business began to fail. So I consulted with my wife and some of my acquaintances, and determined to go again to sea. I was surgeon successively in two ships, and made several voyages, for six years, to the East and West Indies, by which I got some addition to my fortune. My hours of leisure I spent in reading the best authors, ancient and modern, being always provided with a good number of books; and when I was ashore, I observed the manners and dispositions of the people, as well as learned their languages; wherein I had a great facility.

The last of these voyages not proving very fortunate, I grew weary of the sea, and intended to stay at home with my wife and family. I hoped to get business among the sailors; but it did not pay. After three years' expectation that things would mend, I accepted an advantageous offer from Captain William Prichard, master of the *Antelope*, who was making a voyage to the South Seas.^o We set sail from Bristol, May 4, 1699, and our voyage at first was very prosperous.

I will not trouble the reader with the particulars of our adventures in those seas. Let it suffice to inform him, that, in our passage thence to the East Indies, we were driven by a violent storm to the northwest of Van Diemen's Land.^o By an observation we found ourselves in the latitude of 30 degrees 2 minutes south. Twelve of our crew were dead by immoderate

labor and poor food, and the rest were in a very weak condition. On the 5th of November, which was the beginning of summer in those parts, the weather being very hazy, the seamen spied a rock within half a cable's length of the ship; but the wind was so strong that we were driven directly upon it, and immediately split. Six of the crew, of whom I was one, having let down a boat into the sea, made a shift to get clear of the ship and the rock. We rowed, by my computation, about three leagues, till we were able to work no longer. We, therefore, trusted ourselves to the mercy of the waves; and in about half an hour the boat was upset by a sudden flurry.

What became of my companions in the boat, as well as of those who were left in the vessel, I cannot tell, but conclude they were all lost. For my own part, I swam as Fortune directed me, and was pushed forward by wind and tide. I often let my legs drop, and could feel no bottom; but when I was almost gone I found myself within my depth: and by this time the storm was much abated. The declivity was so small, that I walked near a mile before I got to the shore, which I reached as I conjectured at about eight o'clock in the evening. I then advanced forward nearly half a mile, but could not discover any sign of houses or inhabitants. I was extremely tired; and with that, and the heat of the weather, I found myself much inclined to sleep. I lay down on the grass, which was very short and soft, where I slept sounder than ever I remember to have done in my life, and, as I reckoned, above nine hours; for when I awaked it was just daylight.

I attempted to rise, but was not able to stir. I happened to lie on my back, and I found my arms and legs were strongly fastened on each side to the ground, and my hair, which was long and thick, tied down in the same manner. I likewise felt several slender ligatures across my body. I could only look upward. The sun began to grow hot, and the light offended my eyes. I heard a confused noise about me, but, in the

posture I lay, could see nothing except the sky. In a little time I felt something alive moving on my left leg, which, advancing gently forward over my breast, came almost up to my chin. Bending my eyes downward as much as I could, I perceived it to be a human creature not six inches high, with a bow and arrow in his hands, and a quiver at his back.

In the meantime, I felt at least forty more of the same kind (as I conjectured) following the first. I was in the utmost astonishment, and roared so loud that they all ran back in a fright; and some of them, as I was afterward told, were hurt with the falls they got by leaping from my sides to the ground. However, they soon returned; and one of them, who ventured so far as to get a full sight of my face, lifting up his hands and eyes by way of admiration, cried out, in a shrill but distinct voice, "*Hekinah degul.*"

The others repeated the same words several times. I lay all this while, as the reader may believe, in great uneasiness. At length, struggling to get loose, I had the fortune to break the strings and wrench out the pegs that fastened my left arm to the ground. By lifting it up to my face, I discovered the methods they had taken to bind me; and, at the same time, with a violent pull, which gave me excessive pain, I a little loosened the strings that tied down my hair on the left side, so that I was just able to turn my head about two inches. But the creatures ran off a second time, before I could seize them. Then there was a great shout, in a very shrill accent, and, after it ceased, I heard one of them cry aloud, "*Tolgo phonac.*"

In an instant, I felt above a hundred arrows discharged on my left hand, which pricked me like so many needles; and, besides, they shot another flight into the air, whereof many, I suppose, fell on my body (though I felt them not) and some on my face, which I immediately covered with my left hand. When this shower of arrows was over, I fell a-groaning with

grief and pain ; and then, striving again to get loose, they discharged another volley, larger than the first, and some of them attempted, with spears, to stick me in the sides ; but, by good luck, I had on me a leather jerkin,^o which they could not pierce.

I thought it the most prudent method to lie still ; and my design was to continue so till night, when, my left hand being already loose, I could easily free myself. As for the inhabitants, I had reason to believe I might be a match for the greatest armies they could bring against me, if they were all of the same size with him that I saw. But fortune disposed otherwise of me. When the people observed I was quiet, they discharged no more arrows ; but, by the noise I heard, I knew their numbers increased : and about four yards from me, over against my right ear, I heard a knocking for above an hour, like that of people at work. Turning my head that way, as well as the pegs and strings would permit me, I saw a stage erected about a foot and a half from the ground, with two or three ladders to mount it. The stage was capable of holding four of the inhabitants, and thence one of them, who seemed to be a person of quality, made me a long speech, whereof I understood not one syllable. But I should have mentioned, that, before the principal person began his oration, he cried out three times, "*Langro dehul san*" ; whereupon, about fifty of the inhabitants came and cut the strings that fastened the left side of my head, which gave me the liberty of turning it to the right, and of observing the person and gestures of him that was to speak. He acted every part of an orator ; and I could observe many periods of threatenings, and others of promises, pity, and kindness.

I answered in a few words, but in the most submissive manner, lifting up my left hand and both mine eyes to the sun, as calling it for a witness : and being almost famished with hunger, having not eaten a morsel for some hours before I left the

ship, I found the demands of nature so strong upon me that I could not forbear showing my impatience by putting my finger frequently on my mouth, to signify that I wanted food.

The *hurgo* (for so they call a great lord, as I afterward learned) understood me very well. He descended from the stage, and commanded that several ladders should be applied to my sides, on which fully a hundred of the inhabitants mounted, and walked toward my mouth, laden with baskets full of meat and bread, which had been provided and sent thither by the king's orders, upon the first intelligence he received of me. I observed there was the flesh of several animals, but could not distinguish them by the taste. There were shoulders, legs and loins, shaped like those of mutton, and very well dressed, but smaller than the wings of a lark. I ate them by two or three at a mouthful, and took three loaves at a time, about the bigness of musket-bullets. They supplied me as fast as they could, showing a thousand marks of wonder and astonishment at my bulk and appetite.

I then made sign, that I wanted drink. They found by my eating that a small quantity would not suffice me; and, being a most ingenious people, they slung up, with great dexterity, one of their largest hogsheads, then rolled it toward my hand, and beat out the top. I drank it off at a draught, which I might well do, for it did not hold half a pint, and tasted like wine. They brought me a second hogshead, which I drank in the same manner, and made signs for more; but they had none to give me. When I had performed these wonders, they shouted for joy, and danced upon my breast, repeating several times, as they did at first, "*Hekinah degul.*"

They made me a sign that I should throw down the two hogsheads, but first warning the people below to stand out of the way, crying aloud, "*Borach mivolah*"; and when they saw the vessels in the air there was an universal shout of "*Hekinah degul.*"

I confess I was often tempted, while they were passing backward and forward on my body, to seize forty or fifty of the first that came in my reach, and dash them against the ground. But the remembrance of what I had felt, which probably might not be the worst they could do, and the promise of honor I made them—for so I interpreted my submissive behavior—soon drove out these imaginations. Besides, I now considered myself as bound by the laws of hospitality to a people who had treated me with so much expense and magnificence. However, in my thoughts I could not sufficiently wonder at the intrepidity of these diminutive mortals, who durst venture to mount and walk on my body, while one of my hands was at liberty, without trembling at the very sight of so prodigious a creature as I must appear to them.

After some time, when they observed that I made no more demands for meat, there appeared before me a person of high rank from his imperial majesty. His excellency, having mounted on the small of my right leg, advanced forward up to my face, with about a dozen of his retinue; and producing his credentials, which he applied close to my eyes, spoke about ten minutes; often pointing forward; which, as I afterward found, was toward the capital city, about half a mile distant, whither it was agreed that I must be conveyed.

I answered in few words, but to no purpose, and made a sign with my hand that was loose, putting it to the other, and then to my head and body, to signify that I desired my liberty. It appeared that he understood me well enough, for he shook his head by way of disapprobation. However, he made signs, to let me understand that I should have meat and drink enough, and very good treatment. Whereupon, I once more thought of attempting to break my bonds; but, when I felt the smart of their arrows upon my face and hands, which were all in blisters, and many of the darts still sticking in them, and observing likewise that the number of my enemies increased, I

gave tokens to let them know that they might do with me what they pleased.

Upon this, the *hurgo* and his train withdrew, with much civility and cheerful countenances. Soon after, I heard a general shout, with frequent repetitions of the words "*Peplom selan*"; and I felt great numbers of the people on my left side, relaxing the cords to such a degree that I was able to turn on my right side and ease myself. But before this they had daubed my face and both my hands with a sort of ointment, very pleasant to the smell, which, in a few minutes, removed all the smart of their arrows. These circumstances, added to the refreshment I had received by their victuals and drink, which were very nourishing, disposed me to sleep. I slept about eight hours, as I was afterward assured; and it was no wonder, for the physicians, by the emperor's order had mingled a sleepy potion in the hogsheads of wine.

It seems that the first moment I was discovered sleeping on the ground, after my landing, the emperor had early notice of the fact and determined in council that I should be tied in the manner I have related (which was done in the night, while I slept) and that plenty of meat and drink should be sent to me, and a vehicle prepared to carry me to the capital city.

This resolution, perhaps, may appear very bold and dangerous. However, in my opinion, it was extremely prudent, as well as generous; for supposing these people had endeavored to kill me with their spears and arrows while I was asleep, I should certainly have awaked with the first sense of smart, which might so far have roused my rage and strength as to have enabled me to break the strings wherewith I was tied; after which, they could expect no mercy.

These people are most excellent mathematicians, and arrived to a great perfection in mechanics by the encouragement of the emperor, who is a renowned patron of learning. This prince had several frameworks fixed on wheels, for the carriage of trees

and other great weights. He often builds his largest men-of-war, whereof some are nine feet long, in the woods where the timber grows, and has them carried on these trucks, three or four hundred yards, to the sea. Five hundred carpenters and engineers were immediately set at work to prepare the greatest vehicle they had. It was a frame of wood raised three inches from the ground, about seven feet long, and four wide, moving on twenty-two wheels. This contrivance, it seems, set out in four hours after my landing. It was brought parallel to me as I lay. But the principal difficulty was to raise and place me on it. Eighty poles, each one foot high, were erected for this purpose, and very strong cords, of the bigness of pack-thread, were fastened by hooks to many bandages, which the workmen had girt round my neck, my hands, my body, and my legs. Nine hundred of the strongest men were employed to draw up these cords by many pulleys fastened on the poles; and thus, in less than three hours, I was raised and slung onto the vehicle, and there tied fast. All this I was told; for, while the whole operation was performing, I lay in a profound sleep, by the force of that medicine in my liquor. Fifteen hundred of the emperor's largest horses, each about four inches and a half high, were employed to draw me toward the metropolis, which, as I said, was half a mile distant.

About four hours after we began our journey, I awaked by a very ridiculous accident; for the carriage being stopped awhile to adjust something that was out of order, two or three of the young natives had the curiosity to see how I looked when I was asleep. They climbed up onto the wagon, and advancing very softly to my face, one of them, an officer in the guards, put the sharp end of his half-pike a good way up into my left nostril, which tickled my nose like a straw, and made me sneeze violently; whereupon they stole off unperceived. We made a long march the remaining part of that day, and rested at night with five hundred guards on each side of me, half with torches,

and half with bows and arrows, ready to shoot me if I should offer to stir. The next morning at sunrise we continued our march, and arrived within two hundred yards of the city gates about noon. The emperor, and all his court, came out to meet us.

At the place where the carriage stopped there stood an ancient temple, esteemed to be the largest in the whole kingdom; which, having been polluted some years before by a murder, had been applied to common use, and all the ornaments and furniture carried away. In this edifice it was determined I should lodge. The great gate fronting to the north was about four feet high, and almost two feet wide, through which I could easily creep. On each side of the gate was a small window, not above six inches from the ground. Into that on the left side the king's smiths conveyed fourscore and eleven chains, like those that hang to a lady's watch in Europe, and almost as large, which were locked to my left leg with thirty-six padlocks.

Over against this temple, on the other side of the great highway, at twenty feet distance, there was a turret at least five feet high. Here the emperor ascended, with many principal lords of his court, to have an opportunity of viewing me. It was reckoned that more than a hundred thousand inhabitants came out of the town on the same errand; and, I believe there could not be fewer than ten thousand at several times, who mounted upon my body by the help of ladders.

When the workmen found it was impossible for me to break loose they cut all the strings that bound me; and I got up, with as melancholy a disposition as ever I had in my life. But the noise and astonishment of the people, at seeing me rise and walk, are not to be expressed. The chains that held my left leg were about two yards long, and gave me not only the liberty of walking backward and forward in a semicircle, but, being fixed within four inches of the gate, allowed me to creep in and lie at my full length in the temple.

CHAPTER II

The Emperor of Lilliput, attended by several of the Nobility, comes to see the Author in his Confinement — The Emperor's Person and Habit described — Learned Men appointed to teach the Author their Language — He gains Favor by his mild Disposition — His Pockets are searched, and his Sword and Pistols taken from him.

WHEN I found myself on my feet I looked about me, and must confess I never beheld a more entertaining prospect. The country round appeared like a continued garden, and the enclosed fields, which were generally forty feet square, resembled so many beds of flowers. These fields were intermingled with woods, and the tallest trees appeared to be seven feet high.

The emperor descended from the tower, and advanced on horseback toward me, which had like to have cost him dear, for his horse, though very well trained, was wholly unused to such a sight, which appeared as if a mountain moved before him, and he reared up on his hinder feet ; but the emperor, who is an excellent horseman, kept his seat till his attendants ran and held the bridle while his majesty had time to dismount. When he alighted he surveyed me round with great astonishment, but kept beyond the length of my chain. He ordered his cooks and butlers, who were already prepared, to give me victuals and drink, which they pushed forward in some vehicles upon wheels till I could reach them. I took these vehicles, and soon emptied them all. Twenty of them were filled with meat, and ten with liquor, which was contained in earthen vials.

The empress and young princes, attended by many ladies, sat at some distance in their chairs,^o but upon the accident that happened to the emperor's horse they alighted and came near his person, which I am now going to describe. He is taller, by almost the breadth of my thumb nail, than any of his court, which alone is enough to strike awe into the beholders. His features are strong and masculine, his complexion olive, his body and limbs well proportioned, all his motions graceful, and his deportment majestic. He was then in his prime, being twenty-eight years and three-quarters old,^o of which he had reigned about seven in great felicity, and generally victorious. For the better convenience of beholding him I lay on my side, so that my face was parallel to his, and he stood but three yards off. However, I have had him since many times in my hand, and therefore cannot be deceived in the description. His dress was very plain and simple, and the fashion of it between the Asiatic and the European ; but he had on his head a light helmet of gold, adorned with jewels, and a plume on the crest. He held his sword drawn in his hand to defend himself if I should happen to break loose. It was almost three inches long. The hilt and scabbard were gold enriched with diamonds. His voice was shrill, but very clear and articulate, and I could distinctly hear it when I stood up. His imperial majesty spoke often to me, and I returned answers, but neither of us could understand. There were several of his priests and lawyers present (as I conjectured by their apparel), who were commanded to address themselves to me, and I spoke to them in as many languages as I had the least smattering of, which were German, Dutch, Latin, French, Spanish, and Italian, but all to no purpose.

After about two hours the court retired, and I was left with a strong guard to prevent the impertinence and probably the malice of the rabble, who were very impatient to crowd about me as near as they durst, and some of them had the impudence to shoot their arrows at me as I sat on the ground by the door

of my house. But the colonel ordered six of the ringleaders to be seized, and thought no punishment so proper as to deliver them bound into my hands, which some of his soldiers accordingly did, pushing them forward with the butt-ends of their pikes^o into my reach. I took them all in my right hand, put five of them into my coat pocket, and as to the sixth, I made a countenance as if I would eat him alive. The poor man squalled terribly, and the colonel and his officers were in much pain, especially when they saw me take out my penknife, but I soon put them out of fear, for cutting the strings he was bound with, I set him gently on the ground, and away he ran. I treated the rest in the same manner, taking them one by one out of my pocket, and I observed both the soldiers and people were highly delighted at this mark of my clemency, which was represented very much to my advantage at court.

Toward night I got with some difficulty into my house, where I lay on the floor, and continued to do so about a fortnight, during which time the emperor gave orders to have a bed prepared for me. Six hundred beds of the common measure were brought in carriages, and worked up in my house ; a hundred and fifty of their beds sewn together made up the breadth and length, and these were four double, which, however, kept me but very indifferently from the hardness of the floor, that was of smooth stone. By the same computation they provided me with sheets, blankets, and coverlets, tolerable enough for one who had been so long inured to hardships as I.

As the news of my arrival spread through the kingdom, it brought prodigious numbers of rich, idle, and curious people to see me ; so that the villages were almost emptied ; and great neglect of tillage and household affairs must have ensued, if his imperial majesty had not provided, by several proclamations and orders of state, against this inconveniency. He directed that those who had already beheld me should return home, and not presume to come within fifty yards of my house without

license from court ; whereby the secretaries of state got considerable fees.

In the meantime the emperor held frequent councils, to debate what course should be taken with me ; and I was afterward assured by a particular friend, a person of great quality, that the court was under many difficulties concerning me. They apprehended my breaking loose ; that my diet would be very expensive, and might cause a famine. Sometimes they determined to starve me, or at least to shoot me in the face and hands with poisoned arrows, which would soon despatch me ; but again they considered that the stench of so large a carcass might produce a plague in the metropolis, and probably spread through the whole kingdom. In the midst of these consultations, several officers of the army went to the door of the great council-chamber, and two of them being admitted, gave an account of my behavior to the six criminals above mentioned, which made so favorable an impression in the breast of his majesty and the whole board in my behalf, that an imperial commission was issued obliging all the villages nine hundred yards round the city to deliver every morning six beeves, forty sheep, and other victuals for my sustenance ; together with a proportionable quantity of bread ; for the due payment of which his majesty gave drafts upon his treasury.

An establishment was also made of six hundred persons to be my domestics, who had tents built for them, very conveniently on each side of my door. It was likewise ordered that three hundred tailors should make me a suit of clothes, after the fashion of the country ; that six of his majesty's greatest scholars should be employed to instruct me in their language ; and, lastly, that the emperor's horses and those of the nobility, and troops of guard, should be frequently exercised in my sight, to accustom themselves to me.

All these orders were duly put in execution ; and in about three weeks I made a great progress in learning their language ;

during which time the emperor frequently honored me with his visits, and was pleased to assist my masters in teaching me. We began already to converse, and the first words I learned were to express my desire that he would please to give me my liberty; which I every day repeated on my knees. His answer, as I could apprehend it, was, that this must be a work of time, not to be thought on without the advice of his council, and that first I must "*lumos kelmin pesso desmar lon emposo*"; that is, swear a peace with him and his kingdom. However, he said I should be used with all kindness; and he advised me to acquire, by my patience and discreet behavior, the good opinion of himself and his subjects. He desired I would not take it ill, if he gave orders to search me; for probably I might carry about me several weapons, which must needs be dangerous things, if they answered the bulk of so prodigious a person. By the laws of the kingdom, I must be searched by two of his officers. He knew this could not be done without my consent and assistance; that he had so good an opinion of my generosity and justice as to trust their persons in my hands. Whatever they took from me should be returned when I left the country, or paid for at the rate which I would set upon them.

I took up the two officers in my hands, put them first into my coat pockets, and then into every other pocket about me, except my two fobs,^o and another secret pocket I had no mind should be searched, wherein I had some little necessities that were of no consequence to any but myself. In one of my fobs there was a silver watch, and in the other a small quantity of gold in a purse. These gentlemen, having pen, ink, and paper about them, made an exact inventory of everything they saw; and when they had done desired I would set them down, that they might deliver it to the emperor. This inventory I afterward translated into English, and is word for word as follows:

"In the right coat-pocket of the great man-mountain, after the strictest search, we found only one great piece of coarse

cloth, large enough to be a footcloth for your majesty's chief room of state. In the left pocket we saw a huge silver chest, with a cover of the same metal, which we, the searchers, were not able to lift. We desired it should be opened, and one of us, stepping into it, found himself up to the mid-leg in a sort of dust, some part whereof, flying up to our faces, set us both a-sneezing for several times together.

“In his right waistcoat pocket we found a prodigious bundle of white, thin substances, folded one over another, about the bigness of three men, tied with a strong cable, and marked with black figures, which we humbly conceive to be writings, every letter almost half as large as the palm of our hands. In the left there was a sort of engine, from the back of which were extended twenty long poles, resembling the palisadoes before your majesty's court; wherewith we conjecture the man-mountain combs his head; for we did not always trouble him with questions, because we found it a great difficulty to make him understand us.

“In the large pocket, on the right side of his middle cover (by which they meant my breeches) we saw a hollow pillar of iron, about the length of a man, fastened to a strong piece of timber larger than the pillar; and upon one side of the pillar were huge pieces of iron sticking out, cut into strange figures, which we know not what to make of. In the left pocket, another engine of the same kind. In the smaller pocket, on the right side, were several round, flat pieces of white and red metal, of different bulk. Some of the white, which seemed to be silver, were so large and heavy that my comrade and I could hardly lift them. In the left pocket were two black pillars irregularly shaped. We could with difficulty reach the top of them, as we stood at the bottom of his pocket. Within each of these was enclosed a prodigious plate of steel; which, by our orders, we obliged him to show us, because we apprehended they might be dangerous engines. He took them out of their cases,

and told us that, in his own country, his practice was to shave his beard with one of these, and to cut his meat with the other.

“There were two pockets which we could not enter. These he called his fobs. They were two large slits cut into the top of his middle cover, but squeezed close by the pressure of his body. Out of the right fob hung a great silver chain, with a wonderful kind of engine at the bottom. We directed him to draw out whatever was at the end of that chain, which appeared to be a globe, half silver, and half of some transparent metal; for, on the transparent side, we saw certain strange figures circularly drawn, and thought we could touch them, till we found our fingers stopped by that lucid substance. He put this engine to our ears, which made an incessant noise like that of a water-mill: and we conjecture it is either some unknown animal, or the god that he worships; but we are more inclined to the latter opinion, because he assured us (if we understood him right, for he expressed himself very imperfectly) that he seldom did anything without consulting it. He called it his oracle, and said it pointed out the time for every action of his life. From the left fob he took out a net, almost large enough for a fisherman, but contrived to open and shut like a purse, and served him for the same use. We found therein several massy pieces of yellow metal, which, if they be real gold, must be of immense value.

“Having thus, in obedience to your majesty’s commands, diligently searched all his pockets, we observed a girdle about his waist, made of the hide of some prodigious animal, from which, on the left side, hung a sword of the length of five men; and on the right, a bag or pouch divided into two cells, each cell capable of holding three of your majesty’s subjects. In one of these cells were several balls, of a most ponderous metal, about the bigness of our heads, and requiring a strong hand to lift them. The other cell contained a heap of certain black grains, but of no great bulk or weight, for we could hold above fifty of them in the palms of our hands.

"This is an exact inventory of what we found about the body of the man-mountain, who used us with great civility, and due respect to your majesty's commission. Signed and sealed on the fourth day of the eighty-ninth moon of your majesty's auspicious reign.

"CLEFREN FRELOCK, MARSI FRELOCK."

When this inventory was read over to the emperor he directed me, although in very gentle terms, to deliver up the several particulars. He first called for my sword, scabbard and all. In the meantime he ordered three thousand of his choicest troops to surround me at a distance, with their bows and arrows ready to discharge; but I did not observe them, for my eyes were wholly fixed upon his majesty. He then desired me to draw my sword, which, although it had got some rust by the sea-water, was in most parts exceeding bright. I did so, and immediately all the troops gave a shout between terror and surprise: for the sun shone clear, and the reflection dazzled their eyes, as I waved the sword to and fro in my hand. His majesty, who is a most magnanimous prince, was less daunted than I could expect: he ordered me to return it into the scabbard, and cast it on the ground as gently as I could, about six feet from the end of my chain.

The next thing he demanded was one of the hollow iron pillars: by which he meant my pocket-pistols. I drew it out, and at his desire, as well as I could, explained to him the use of it; and charging it only with powder, which, by the closeness of my pouch, happened to escape wetting in the sea (an inconvenience against which all prudent mariners take special care to provide), I first cautioned the emperor not to be afraid, and then I let it off in the air. The astonishment here was much greater than at the sight of my sword. Hundreds fell down as if they had been struck dead; and even the emperor, although he stood his ground, could not recover himself in some time.

I delivered up both my pistols in the same manner as I had done my sword, and then my pouch of powder and bullets ; begging him that the former might be kept from the fire, for it would kindle with the smallest spark, and blow up his imperial palace into the air. I likewise delivered up my watch, which the emperor was very curious to see, and commanded two of his tallest yeomen of the guards to bear it on a pole upon their shoulders. He was amazed at the continual noise it made, and the motion of the minute-hand, which he could easily discern ; for their sight is much more acute than ours. I then gave up my silver and copper money, my purse with nine large pieces of gold and some smaller ones ; my knife and razor, my comb and silver snuff-box, my handkerchief, and journal-book. My sword, pistols, and pouch were conveyed in carriages to his majesty's stores ; but the rest of my goods were returned to me.

I had, as I before observed, one private pocket, which escaped their search, wherein there was a pair of spectacles (which I sometimes use for the weakness of my eyes) a pocket perspective,^o and several other little conveniences ; which, being of no consequence to the emperor, I did not think myself bound to show, and I apprehended they might be lost or spoiled if I ventured them out of my possession.

CHAPTER III

The Author diverts the Emperor, and his Nobility of both sexes, in a very uncommon manner — The Diversions of the Court of Lilliput described — The Author has his Liberty granted to him upon certain conditions.

MY gentleness and good behavior had gained so far on the emperor and his court, and indeed upon the army and people in general, that I began to conceive hopes of getting my liberty in a short time. I took all possible methods to cultivate this favorable disposition. The natives came, by degrees, to be less apprehensive of any danger from me. I would sometimes lie down, and let five or six of them dance on my hand ; and at last the boys and girls would venture to come and play at hide-and-seek in my hair. I had now made good progress in understanding and speaking their language. The emperor had a mind one day to entertain me with several of the country shows, wherein they exceed all nations I have known, both for dexterity and magnificence. I was diverted with none so much as that of the rope-dancers, who performed on a slender white thread, extended about two feet from the ground.

This diversion is only practised by those persons who are candidates for great employments and high favor at court. They are trained in this art from their youth. When a great office is vacant, either by death or dismissal, five or six of those candidates petition the emperor to entertain his majesty and the court with a dance on the rope ; and whoever jumps the highest without falling, succeeds to the office. Very often the chief ministers themselves are commanded to show their skill,

and to convince the emperor that they have not lost their faculty. Flimnap, the treasurer, can cut a caper on the straight rope, at least an inch higher than any other lord in the whole empire. I have seen him do the *summerset*° several times together, upon a trencher fixed on the rope, which is no thicker than a common pack-thread in England. My friend Reldresal, principal secretary for private affairs, is, in my opinion, the second after the treasurer.

These diversions are often attended with fatal accidents. I myself have seen two or three candidates break a limb. But the danger is much greater when the ministers themselves are commanded to show their dexterity; for, by contending to excel themselves and their fellows, they strain so far that there is hardly one of them who hath not received a fall, and some of them two or three. I was assured that, a year or two before my arrival, Flimnap would have broken his neck if one of the king's cushions, that accidentally lay on the ground, had not weakened the force of his fall.

There is likewise another diversion, which is only shown before the emperor and empress, and first minister, upon particular occasions. The emperor lays on a table three fine silken threads of six inches long. One is blue, the other red, and the third green. These threads are proposed as prizes for those persons whom the emperor hath a mind to distinguish by a peculiar mark of his favor. The ceremony is performed in his majesty's great chamber of state, where the candidates are to undergo a trial of dexterity, very different from the former, and such as I have not observed the least resemblance of in any other country of the old or the new world. The emperor holds a stick in his hands, parallel to the horizon, while the candidates advancing, one by one, sometimes leap over the stick, sometimes creep under it, backward and forward, several times, according as the stick is advanced or depressed. Sometimes the emperor holds one end of the stick, and his first minister

the other; sometimes the minister has it entirely to himself. Whoever performs his part with most agility, and holds out the longest in leaping and creeping, is rewarded with the blue colored silk; and red is given to the next, and the green to the third, which they all wear girt twice round the middle; and you see few great persons about this court who are not adorned with one of these girdles.

The horses of the army, and those of the royal stables, having been daily led before me, were no longer shy, but would come up to my very feet without starting. The riders would leap them over my hand, as I held it on the ground; and one of the emperor's huntsmen, upon a large courser, went over my foot, shoe and all, which was indeed a prodigious leap. I had the good fortune to divert the emperor one day after a very extraordinary manner. I desired he would order several sticks two feet long, and the thickness of an ordinary cane, to be brought me; whereupon his majesty commanded the master of his woods to give directions accordingly; and the next morning six woodmen arrived with as many carriages, drawn by eight horses to each. I took nine of these sticks, and fixed them firmly in the ground in a quadrangular figure, two feet and a half square. I took four other sticks, and tied them parallel at each corner, about two feet from the ground. Then I fastened my handkerchief to the nine sticks that stood erect, and extended it on all sides till it was as tight as the top of a drum; and the four parallel sticks, rising about five inches higher than the handkerchief, served as ledges on each side.

When I had finished my work, I desired the emperor to let a troop of his best horsemen, twenty-four in number, come and exercise upon this plain. His majesty approved of the proposal, and I took them up, one by one, in my hands, ready mounted and armed, with the proper officers to exercise them. As soon as they got into order they divided into two parties, performed mock skirmishes, discharged blunt arrows, drew their swords, fled and

pursued, attacked and retired, and, in short, discovered the best military discipline I ever beheld. The parallel sticks secured them and their horses from falling off the stage; and the emperor was so much delighted that he ordered this entertainment to be repeated several days. Once he was pleased to be lifted up and give the word of command; and with great difficulty persuaded even the empress herself to let me hold her in her sedan-chair within two yards of the stage, whence she was able to take a full view of the whole performance. It was my good fortune that no ill accident happened in these entertainments; only once a fiery horse, that belonged to one of the captains, pawing with his hoof, struck a hole in my handkerchief, and his foot slipping, he overthrew his rider and himself; but I immediately relieved them both, and covering the hole with one hand, I set down the troop with the other, in the same manner as I took them up. The horse that fell was strained in the shoulder, but the rider got no hurt; and I repaired my handkerchief as well as I could. However, I would not trust to the strength of it any more in such dangerous enterprises.

About two or three days before I was set at liberty, as I was entertaining the court with this kind of feats, there arrived a messenger to inform his majesty that some of his subjects, riding near the place where I was first taken up, had seen a great black substance lying on the ground, very oddly shaped, extending its edges round as wide as his majesty's bedchamber, and rising up in the middle as high as a man; that it was no living creature, as they at first apprehended, for it lay on the grass without motion, and some of them had walked round it several times; that, by mounting upon each other's shoulders, they had got to the top, which was flat and even, and stamping upon it, they found it was hollow within; that they humbly conceived it might be something belonging to the man-mountain; and, if his majesty pleased, they would undertake to bring it with only five horses.

I presently knew what they meant, and was glad at heart to receive this intelligence. It seems, upon my first reaching the shore after our shipwreck, before I came to the place where I went to sleep, my hat, which had been fastened with a string to my head, and had stuck on all the time I was swimming, fell off; the string breaking by some accident which I never observed. I entreated his imperial majesty to give orders it might be brought to me as soon as possible, describing to him the use and the nature of it; and the next day the wagoners arrived with it, but not in a very good condition. They had bored two holes in the brim, within an inch and a half of the edge, and fastened two hooks in the holes; these hooks were tied by a long cord to the harness, and thus my hat was dragged along for above half an English mile; but the ground in that country being extremely smooth and level, it received less damage than I expected.

Two days after this adventure, the emperor, having ordered that part of his army which quarters in and about his metropolis to be in readiness, took a fancy of diverting himself in a very singular manner. He desired I would stand with my legs as far asunder as I conveniently could. He then commanded his general (who was an old experienced leader) to draw up the troops in close order and march them under me; the foot by twenty-four abreast, and the horse by sixteen, with drums beating, colors flying, and pikes advanced. This body consisted of three thousand foot and a thousand horse.

I had sent so many memorials and petitions for my liberty, that his majesty at length mentioned the matter, first in the cabinet, and then in a full council; where it was opposed by none except Skyresh Bolgolan, who was pleased, without any provocation, to be my mortal enemy. But it was carried against him by the whole board, and confirmed by the emperor. That minister was admiral of the realm, very much in his master's confidence, and a person well versed in affairs, but of a

morose and sour disposition. However, he was at length persuaded to comply ; but prevailed that the articles and conditions upon which I should be set free, and to which I must swear, should be drawn up by himself. These articles were brought to me by Skyresh Bolgolam in person, attended by two under-secretaries and several persons of distinction.

After they were read, I was demanded to swear to the performance of them ; first in the manner of my own country, and afterward in the method prescribed by their laws ; which was, to hold my right foot in my left hand, to place the middle finger of my right hand on the crown of my head, and my thumb on the tip of my right ear. The reader may perhaps be curious to have some idea of the style and manner of expression peculiar to that people, as well as to know the articles upon which I recovered my liberty, and I have made a translation of the whole instrument, word for word, as near as I was able.

“Golbasto Momarem Evlame Gurdilo Shefin Mully Uly Gue, most mighty Emperor of Lilliput, delight and terror of the universe, whose dominions extend five thousand *blustrugs* (about twelve miles in circumference) to the extremities of the globe ; monarch of all monarchs, taller than the sons of men ; whose feet press down to the centre, and whose head strikes against the sun, at whose nod the princes of the earth shake their knees ; pleasant as the spring, comfortable as the summer, fruitful as autumn, dreadful as winter. His most sublime majesty proposes to the man-mountain, lately arrived at our celestial dominions, the following articles, which, by a solemn oath, he shall be obliged to perform :

“1st. The man-mountain shall not depart from our dominions without our license under our great seal.

“2d. He shall not presume to come into our metropolis without our express order ; at which time the inhabitants shall have two hours’ warning to keep within their doors.

“3d. The said man-mountain shall confine his walks to our principal highroads, and not offer to walk, or lie down, in a meadow or field of corn.

“4th. As he walks the said roads he shall take the utmost care not to trample upon the bodies of any of our loving subjects, their horses, or carriages, nor take any of our said subjects into his hands without their own consent.

“5th. If a message requires extraordinary dispatch, the man-mountain shall be obliged to carry in his pocket the messenger and horse a six days' journey, and return the said messenger (if so required) safe to our imperial presence.

“6th. He shall be our ally against our enemies in the island of Blefuscu, and do his utmost to destroy their fleet, which is now preparing to invade us.

“7th. That the said man-mountain shall, at his times of leisure, assist our workmen to raise certain great stones, for the wall of the principal park, and our royal buildings.

“8th. That the said man-mountain shall, in two moons' time, deliver an exact survey of the circumference of our dominions, by a computation of his own paces round the coast.

“Lastly. That, upon his solemn oath to observe all the above articles, the said man-mountain shall have a daily allowance of meat and drink sufficient for the support of 1,728 of our subjects, with free access to our royal person, and other marks of our favor. Given at our palace at Belfaborac, the twelfth day of the ninety-first moon of our reign.”

I swore and subscribed to these articles with great cheerfulness and content, whereupon my chains were immediately unlocked, and I was at full liberty. The emperor himself in person, did me the honor to be by at the whole ceremony. I made my acknowledgments by prostrating myself at his majesty's feet: but he commanded me to rise; and after many gracious expressions, he added, that he hoped I should prove a useful

servant, and well deserve all the favors he had already conferred upon me, or might do for the future.

The reader may please to observe, that, in the last article for the recovery of my liberty, the emperor stipulates to allow me a quantity of meat and drink sufficient for the support of 1,728 Lilliputians. Some time after, asking a friend at court how they came to fix on that determinate number, he told me that his majesty's mathematicians, having taken the height of my body by the help of a quadrant, and finding it to exceed theirs in the proportion of twelve to one, they concluded, from the similarity of their bodies, that mine must contain at least 1,728 of theirs, and consequently would require as much food as was necessary to support that number of Lilliputians. By which the reader may conceive an idea of the ingenuity of that people, as well as the prudent and exact economy of so great a prince.

CHAPTER IV

Mildendo, the metropolis of Lilliput, described, together with the Emperor's Palace — A conversation between the Author and a Principal Secretary concerning the affairs of that Empire — The Author's offer to serve the Emperor in his wars.

THE first request I made, after I had obtained my liberty, was, that I might have license to see Mildendo, the metropolis ; which the emperor readily granted me, but with a special charge to do no hurt either to the inhabitants or their houses. The people had notice, by proclamation, of my design to visit the town. The wall, which encompassed the town, is two feet and a half high, and at least eleven inches broad, so that a coach and horses may be driven very safely on it ; and it is flanked with strong towers at ten feet distance. I stepped over the great western gate, and passed very gently and sideling through the two principal streets, only in my waistcoat, for fear of damaging the roofs and eaves of the houses with the skirts of my coat. I walked with the utmost circumspection, to avoid treading on any stragglers that might remain in the streets ; although the orders were very strict that all people should keep in their houses. The garret windows and tops of houses were so crowded with spectators that I thought in all my travels I had not seen a more populous place. The city is an exact square, each side of the wall being five hundred feet long. The two great streets, which run across and divide it into four quarters, are five feet wide. The lanes and alleys, which I could not enter, but only viewed them as I passed, are from twelve to eighteen inches.

The town is capable of holding five hundred thousand souls : the houses are from three to five stories : the shops and markets well provided.

The emperor's palace is in the centre of the city, where the two great streets meet. It is enclosed by a wall two feet high, and twenty feet distant from the buildings. I had his majesty's permission to step over this wall ; and then I could easily view the palace on every side. The outward court is a square of forty feet, and includes two other courts. In the inmost are the royal apartments, which I was very desirous to see, but the great gates from one square into another were only eighteen inches high and seven inches wide. Now the buildings of the outer court were at least five feet high, and it was impossible for me to stride over them without infinite damage to the pile, though the walls were strongly built of hewn stone, and four inches thick. At the same time, the emperor had a great desire that I should see the magnificence of his palace ; but this I was not able to do till three days after, which I spent in cutting down with my knife some of the largest trees in the royal park, about a hundred yards distant from the city. Of these trees I made two stools, each about three feet high, and strong enough to bear my weight.

The people, having received notice a second time, I went again through the city to the palace with my two stools in my hands. When I came to the side of the outer court, I stood upon one stool, and took the other in my hand. This I lifted over the roof, and gently set it down on the space between the first and second court, which was eight feet wide. I then stepped over the buildings very conveniently from one stool to the other, and drew up the first after me with a hooked stick. By this contrivance I got into the inmost court ; and, lying down upon my side, I applied my face to the windows of the middle stories, which were left open on purpose, and discovered the most splendid apartments that can be imagined. There I

saw the empress and the young princes, in their several lodgings, with their chief attendants about them. Her imperial majesty was pleased to smile very graciously upon me, and gave me out of the window her hand to kiss.

One morning, about a fortnight after I had obtained my liberty, Reldresal, principal secretary of private affairs, came to my house, attended only by one servant. He ordered his coach to wait at a distance, and desired I would give him an hour's audience ; which I readily consented to, on account of the many good offices he had done me during my solicitations at court. I offered to lie down, that he might the more conveniently reach my ear ; but he chose rather to let me hold him in my hand during our conversation. He began with compliments on my liberty ; but, however, added, that if it had not been for the present situation of things at court perhaps I might not have obtained it so soon. "For," said he, "as flourishing a condition as we may appear to be in to foreigners, we labor under two mighty evils ; a violent faction at home, and the danger of an invasion by a most potent enemy from abroad. As to the first, you are to understand that for above seventy moons past there have been two struggling parties in this empire, under the names *Tramecksan* and *Slamecksan*, from the high and low heels of their shoes, by which they distinguish themselves. It is alleged, indeed, that the high heels are most agreeable to our ancient constitution ; but, however this be, his majesty hath determined to make use of only low heels in the administration of the government, and all offices in the gift of the crown, as you cannot but observe ; and particularly that his majesty's imperial heels are lower, at least by a *drurr*, than any of his court (*drurr* is a measure about the fourteenth part of an inch). The animosities between these two parties run so high that they will neither eat nor drink, nor talk with each other. We compute the *Tramecksan*, or high heels, to exceed us in number ; but the power is wholly on our side. We apprehend his impe-

rial highness, the heir to the crown, to have some tendency toward the high heels ; at least we can plainly discover one of his heels higher than the other, which gives him a hobble in his gait.

“Now, in the midst of these intestine disquiets, we are threatened with an invasion from the island of Blefuscu, which is the other great empire of the universe, almost as large and powerful as this of his majesty. For, as to what we have heard you affirm, that there are other kingdoms and states, in the world, inhabited by human creatures as large as yourself, our philosophers are in much doubt, and would rather conjecture that you dropped from the moon or one of the stars ; because it is certain that an hundred mortals of your bulk would in a short time destroy all the fruits and cattle of his majesty’s dominions. Besides, our histories of six thousand moons make no mention of any other regions than the two great empires of Lilliput and Blefuscu ; which two mighty powers have, as I was going to tell you, been engaged in a most obstinate war for thirty-six moons past. It began upon the following occasion : It is allowed on all hands that the primitive way of breaking eggs, before we eat them, was upon the larger end ; but his present majesty’s grandfather, while he was a boy, going to eat an egg, and breaking it according to the ancient practice, happened to cut one of his fingers ; whereupon, the emperor his father published an edict, commanding all his subjects to break the smaller end of their eggs.

“The people so highly resented this law that our histories tell us there have been six rebellions raised on that account ; wherein one emperor lost his life, and another his crown. These civil commotions were constantly fomented by the monarchs of Blefuscu ; and when they were quelled the exiles always fled for refuge to that empire. It is computed that eleven thousand persons have at several times suffered death rather than submit to break their eggs at the smaller end. Many hundred large

volumes have been published upon this controversy; but the books of the Big-endians have been long forbidden, and the whole party rendered incapable by law of holding office. During the course of those troubles, the emperors of Blefuscu did frequently expostulate by their ambassadors, accusing us of making a schism in religion by offending against a fundamental doctrine of our great prophet Lustrog, in the fifty-fourth chapter of the blundecral (which is their Bible). This, however, is thought to be a mere strain upon the text; for the words are these: that all true believers shall break their eggs at the convenient end. And which is the convenient end seems, in my humble opinion, to be left to every man's conscience, or at least left in the power of the chief magistrate to determine.

“Now, the Big-endian exiles have found so much credit in the Emperor of Blefuscu's court, and so much private assistance and encouragement from their party here at home, that a bloody war hath been carried on between the two empires for thirty-six moons with various success; during which time we have lost forty large ships, and a much greater number of smaller vessels, together with thirty thousand of our best seamen and soldiers; and the damage received by the enemy is reckoned to be somewhat greater than ours. However, they have now equipped a numerous fleet, and are just preparing to make a descent upon us; and his imperial majesty, placing great confidence in your valor and strength, hath commanded me to lay this account of his affairs before you.”

I desired the secretary to present my humble duty to the emperor; and to let him know that I thought it would not become me, who was a foreigner, to interfere with parties; but I was ready, with the hazard of my life, to defend his person and state against all invaders.

CHAPTER V

The Author, by an extraordinary stratagem, prevents an Invasion — A high Title is conferred upon him — Ambassadors arrive from the Emperor of Blefuscu, and sue for Peace.

THE empire of Blefuscu is an island, situated to the northeast of Lilliput, from which it is parted only by a channel of eight hundred yards wide. I had not yet seen it, and upon this notice of an intended invasion I avoided appearing on that side of the coast, for fear of being discovered by some of the enemy's ships. They had as yet received no intelligence of me ; all intercourse between the two empires having been strictly forbidden during the war, upon pain of death. I communicated to his majesty a project I had formed, of seizing the enemy's whole fleet ; which, as our scouts assured us, lay at anchor in the harbor, ready to sail with the first fair wind. I consulted the most experienced seamen upon the depth of the channel, which they had often plumbed ; and they told me that in the middle, at high-water, it was seventy *glumgluffs* deep, which is about six feet of European measure ; and the rest of it fifty *glumgluffs* at most. I walked toward the northeast coast, over against Blefuscu, and, lying down behind a hillock, took out my small pocket perspective glass, and viewed the enemy's fleet at anchor, consisting of about fifty men-of-war, and a great number of transports.

I then came back to my house, and gave order for a great quantity of the strongest cable and bars of iron. The cable was about as thick as packthread, and the bars of the length and size of a knitting-needle. I trebled the cable to make it stronger.

and for the same reason I twisted three of the iron bars together, bending the extremities into a hook. Having thus fixed fifty hooks to as many cables, I went back to the northeast coast, and, putting off my coat, shoes, and stockings, walked into the sea, in my leathern jerkin, about half an hour before high-water. I waded with what haste I could, and swam in the middle about thirty yards, till I felt ground. I arrived at the fleet in less than half an hour. The enemy was so frightened when they saw me that they leaped out of their ships, and swam to shore, where there could not be fewer than thirty thousand souls. I then took my tackling, and, fastening a hook to the hole at the prow of each, I tied all the cords together at the end.

While I was thus employed the enemy discharged several thousand arrows, many of which stuck in my hands and face ; and, besides the excessive smart, gave me much disturbance in my work. My greatest apprehension was for my eyes, which I should have infallibly lost, if I had not thought of an expedient. I kept, among other little necessities, a pair of spectacles in a private pocket, which, as I observed before, had escaped the emperor's searchers. These I took out, and fastened as strongly as I could upon my nose, and, thus armed, went on boldly with my work, in spite of the enemy's arrows, many of which struck against the glasses of my spectacles, but without any other effect further than a little to disarrange them. I had now fastened all the hooks, and, taking the knot in my hand, began to pull ; but not a ship would stir, for they were all too fast held by their anchors. I therefore let go the cords, and, leaving the hooks fixed to the ships, I resolutely cut with my knife the cables that fastened the anchors, receiving about two hundred shots in my face and hands. Then I took up the knotted end of the cables, to which my hooks were tied, and with great ease drew fifty of the enemy's largest men-of-war after me.

The Blefuscudians, who had not the least imagination of what I intended, were at first confounded with astonishment. They

had seen me cut the cables, and thought my design was only to let the ships run adrift, or fall foul on each other ; but when they perceived the whole fleet moving in order, and saw me pulling at the end, they set up a scream of grief and despair that it is almost impossible to describe or conceive. When I had got out of danger I stopped a while to pick out the arrows that stuck in my hands and face ; and rubbed on some of the same ointment that was given me at my first arrival, as I have formerly mentioned. I then took off my spectacles, and, waiting about an hour, till the tide was a little fallen, I waded through the middle with my cargo, and arrived safe at the royal port of Lilliput.

The emperor and his whole court stood on the shore awaiting the issue of this great adventure. When I came within hearing, I held up the end of the cable by which the fleet was fastened, and cried in a loud voice, “ Long live the most puissant Emperor of Lilliput ! ” This great prince received me at my landing with all possible encomiums, and created me a *nardac* upon the spot, which is the highest title of honor among them.

His majesty desired I would take some other opportunity of bringing all the rest of his enemy's ships into his ports. So unmeasurable is the ambition of princes, that he seemed to think of nothing less than reducing the whole empire of Blefuscu into a province, and governing it by a viceroy ; of destroying the Big-endian exiles, and compelling that people to break the smaller end of their eggs, by which he would remain the sole monarch of the whole world. But I endeavored to divert him from this design, by many arguments of policy as well as justice ; and I plainly protested that I would never be an instrument of bringing a free and brave people into slavery. When the matter was debated in council, the wisest part of the ministry were of my opinion.

This open, bold declaration of mine was so opposite to the schemes and politics of his imperial majesty that he could never forgive it. He mentioned it in a very artful manner at council.

And from this time began an intrigue between his majesty and a junto of ministers, maliciously bent against me, which broke out in less than two months, and had like to have ended in my utter destruction.

About three weeks after this exploit there arrived a solemn embassy from Blefuscu, with humble offers of a peace ; which was soon concluded, upon conditions very advantageous to our emperor. There were six ambassadors, with a train of about five hundred persons : and their entry was very magnificent, suitable to the grandeur of their master, and the importance of their business. When their treaty was finished, wherein I did them several good offices by the credit I now had, or at least appeared to have, at court, their excellencies, who were privately told how much I had been their friend, made me a visit. They began with many compliments upon my valor and generosity, invited me to that kingdom in the emperor their master's name, and desired me to show them some proofs of my prodigious strength, of which they had heard so many wonders : wherein I readily obliged them.

When I had for some time entertained their excellencies to their infinite satisfaction and surprise, I desired they would present my most humble respects to the emperor their master, the renown of whose virtues had so justly filled the whole world with admiration, and whose royal person I resolved to attend before I returned to my own country. Accordingly, the next time I had the honor to see our emperor, I desired his permission to wait on the Blefuscudian monarch, which he granted me, as I could plainly perceive, in a very cold manner ; but could not guess the reason, till I had a whisper from a certain person, that Flimnap and Bolgolam had represented my intercourse with those ambassadors as a mark of disaffection ; from which I am sure my heart was wholly free.

It is to be observed that these ambassadors spoke to me by an interpreter, the languages of both empires differing as much

from each other as any two in Europe, and each nation priding itself upon the antiquity, beauty, and energy of their own tongues, with an avowed contempt for that of their neighbor ; yet our emperor, standing upon the advantage he had got by the seizure of their fleet, obliged them to deliver their credentials, and make their speech in the Lilliputian tongue. It must be confessed, that, from the great intercourse of trade and commerce between both realms, from the continual reception of exiles, which is mutual among them, and from the custom, in each empire, to send their young nobility and richer gentry to the other, in order to polish themselves by seeing the world, and understanding men and manners, there are few persons of distinction, or merchants, or seamen, who dwell in the maritime parts, but who can hold conversation in both tongues ; as I found some weeks after, when I went to pay my respects to the Emperor of Blefuscu, which, in the midst of great misfortunes, through the malice of my enemies, proved a very happy adventure to me, as I shall relate in its proper place.

CHAPTER VI

Of the Inhabitants of Lilliput ; their Learning, Laws, and Customs ; the Manner of Educating their Children — The Author's way of living in that Country.

ALTHOUGH I do not intend to give a detailed description of this empire of Lilliput, yet I am content to gratify the curious reader with some general ideas. As the common size of the natives is somewhat under six inches high, so there is an exact proportion in all other animals, as well as plants and trees. For instance, the tallest horses and oxen are between four and five inches in height, the sheep an inch and a half, more or less ; their geese about the bigness of a sparrow, and so the several gradations, downward, till you come to the smallest, which, to my sight, were almost invisible ; but nature hath adapted the eyes of the Lilliputians to all objects proper for their view. They see with great exactness, but at no great distance. To show the sharpness of their sight toward objects that are near, I have been much pleased observing a cook plucking the feathers from a lark, which was not so large as a common fly ; and a young girl threading an invisible needle with invisible silk. Their tallest trees are about seven feet high ; I mean some of those in the great royal park, the tops whereof I could but just reach.

Learning for many ages hath flourished in all its branches among them ; but their manner of writing is very peculiar, being neither from the left to the right, like the Europeans ; nor from the right to the left, like the Arabians ; nor from up to down

like the Chinese ; but aslant from one corner of the paper to the other.

They bury their dead with their heads directly downward, because they hold an opinion, that in eleven thousand moons they are all to rise again ; in which period the earth (which they conceive to be flat) will turn upside down, and by this means they shall at their resurrection be found ready standing on their feet. The learned among them confess the absurdity of this doctrine ; but the practice still continues, in compliance to the vulgar.

There are some laws and customs in this empire very peculiar ; and if they were not so directly contrary to those of my own dear country, I should be tempted to say a little in their justification. The first I shall mention relates to informers. All crimes against the state are punished with the utmost severity ; but if the person accused maketh his innocence plainly to appear upon his trial, the accuser is immediately put to an ignominious death ; and out of his goods or lands the innocent person is quadruply recompensed for the loss of his time, for the danger he underwent, for the hardship of his imprisonment, and for all the charges he hath been at in making his defence. The emperor does also confer on him some public mark of his favor, and proclamation is made of his innocence through the whole city.

They look upon fraud as a greater crime than theft, and therefore seldom fail to punish it with death ; for they allege that care and vigilance may preserve a man's goods from thieves, but honesty has no defence against superior cunning ; and, since it is necessary that there should be a perpetual intercourse of buying and selling, and dealing upon credit, where fraud is permitted or connived at, or hath no law to punish it, the honest dealer is always undone, and the knave gets the advantage. I remember when I was once interceding with the king for a criminal who had wronged his

master of a great sum of money, which he ran away with ; and happening to tell his majesty that it was only a breach of trust, the emperor thought it monstrous in me to offer as a defence the greatest aggravation of the crime ; and truly I had little to say in return, further than that different nations had different customs ; for I confess I was heartily ashamed.

Although we usually call reward and punishment the two hinges upon which all government turns, yet I could never observe this maxim to be put in practice by any nation, except that of Lilliput. Whoever can there bring sufficient proof that he hath strictly observed the laws of his country for seventy-three moons hath a claim to certain privileges, with a sum of money, out of a fund appropriated for that use. These people thought it a prodigious defect of policy among us when I told them that our laws were enforced only by penalties, without any mention of reward. It is upon this account that the image of Justice, in their courts, is formed with six eyes, two before, as many behind, and on each side one, to signify circumspection ; with a bag of gold open in her right hand, and a sword sheathed in her left, to show she is more disposed to reward than to punish.

In choosing persons for employment they have more regard to good morals than to great abilities. They suppose truth, justice, temperance, and the like, to be in every man's power ; the practice of which virtues, assisted by experience and a good intention, would qualify any man for the service of his country, except where a course of study is required. But they thought the want of moral virtues was so far from being supplied by superior endowments of the mind that employments could never be put into such dangerous hands as those of persons so qualified ; and at least, that the mistakes committed by ignorance, in a virtuous disposition, would never be of such fatal consequence to the public weal, as the practices of a man whose inclinations led him to be corrupt, and had great abilities to manage, and multiply, and defend, his corruptions.

In relating these and the following laws, I would only be understood to mean the original institutions, and not the most scandalous corruptions, into which these people are fallen by the degenerate nature of man. For, as to that infamous practice of acquiring great employments by dancing on the ropes, or badges of favor and distinction by leaping over sticks and creeping under them, the reader is to observe, that they were first introduced by the grandfather of the emperor now reigning, and grew to the present height by the gradual increase of party and faction.

Ingratitude is among them a capital crime ; for they reason, that whoever makes ill returns to his benefactor must needs be a common enemy to the rest of mankind, from whom he hath received no obligation, and therefore such a man is not fit to live.

Their notions relating to the duties of parents and children differ extremely from ours. Their opinion is, that parents are the last of all others to be trusted with the education of their own children ; and therefore they have in every town public nurseries, where all parents, except cottagers and laborers, are obliged to send their infants to be reared and educated, when they come to the age of twenty moons, at which time they are supposed to have some rudiments of docility. These schools have certain professors, well skilled in preparing children for such a condition of life as befits the rank of their parents, and their own capacities, as well as inclinations.

The nurseries for males of noble or eminent birth are provided with grave and learned professors, and their several deputies. The clothes and food of the children are plain and simple. They are bred up in the principles of honor, justice, courage, modesty, clemency, religion, and love of their country. They are always employed in some business, except in the times of eating and sleeping, which are very short, and two hours for diversions consisting of bodily exercises. They go together in smaller or greater

numbers to take their diversions, always accompanied by a professor, or one of his deputies ; whereby they avoid those early impressions of folly and vice to which our children are subject. Their parents are suffered to see them only twice a year. The visit lasts but an hour. They are allowed to kiss the child at meeting and parting : but a professor, who always stands by on those occasions, will not suffer them to whisper, or use any fondling expressions, or bring any presents of toys, sweetmeats, and the like.

The money from each family for the education and entertainment of a child, upon failure of due payment, is levied by the emperor's officers.

The nurseries for children of ordinary gentlemen, merchants, traders, and handicrafts, are managed proportionably after the same manner ; only those designed for trades are put out apprentices at eleven years old ; whereas those of persons of quality continue in their nurseries till fifteen, which answers to twenty-one with us : but the confinement is gradually lessened for the last three years.

In the female nurseries the young girls of quality are educated much like the males. They are dressed by servants of their own sex ; till they come to dress themselves, which is at five years old. If it be found that these nurses ever presume to entertain the girls with frightful or foolish stories, they are imprisoned for a year, and banished for life to the most desolate part of the country. Thus the young ladies are as much ashamed of being cowards and fools as the men ; and despise all personal ornaments, beyond decency and cleanliness : neither did I perceive any difference in their education, made by their difference of sex, only that the exercises of the females were not so robust ; and that some rules were given them relating to domestic life, and a smaller compass of learning was enjoined them : for the maxim is, that a wife should be always a reasonable and agreeable companion, because she cannot always be young. When the

girls are twelve years old, which among them is the marriageable age, their parents or guardians take them home, with great expression of gratitude to the professors, and seldom without tears of the young lady and her companions.

In the nurseries of females of the humbler sort the children are instructed in all kinds of works proper for their sex. Those intended for apprentices are dismissed at seven years old. The rest are kept to eleven.

The cottagers and laborers keep their children at home, their business being only to till and cultivate the earth, and therefore their education is of little consequence to the public: but the old and diseased among them are supported by hospitals; for begging is a trade unknown in this kingdom.

And here it may perhaps divert the curious reader to be given some account of my manner of living in this country, during a residence of nine months and thirteen days. I made for myself a table and chair out of the largest trees in the royal park. Two hundred sempstresses were employed to make me linen for my bed and table, all of the strongest and coarsest kind they could get; which, however, they were forced to quilt together in several folds, for the thickest was some degrees finer than lawn. Their linen is usually three inches wide, and three feet make a piece. Three hundred tailors were employed to make me clothes. For taking my measure I kneeled down, and they raised a ladder from the ground to my neck. Upon this ladder one of them mounted, and let fall a plumb-line from my collar to the floor, which just answered the length of my coat; but my waist and arms I measured myself. When my clothes were finished, which was done in my house (for the largest of theirs would not have been able to hold them), they looked like the patchwork made by the ladies in England, only that the cloth in my garments was all of a color.

I had three hundred cooks to furnish my victuals, in little convenient huts built about my house, where they and their

families lived, and prepared me two dishes apiece. I took up twenty waiters in my hand, and placed them on the table ; an hundred more attended below on the ground, some with dishes of meat, and some with barrels of wine ; all which the waiters above drew up, as I wanted, by certain cords, as we draw the bucket up a well in Europe. A dish of their meat was a good mouthful, and a barrel of their liquor a reasonable draught. Their beef is excellent. I have had a sirloin so large that I have been forced to make three bites of it : but this is rare. My servants were astonished to see me eat it, bones and all, as in our country we do the leg of a lark. Their geese and turkeys I usually eat at a mouthful, and I must confess they far exceed ours. Of their smaller fowl I could take up twenty or thirty at the end of my knife.

One day his imperial majesty, being informed of my way of living, desired that himself and his royal consort, with the young princes and princesses, might have the happiness, as he was pleased to call it, of dining with me. They came accordingly, and I placed them on chairs of state, upon my table just over against me, with their guards about them. Flimnap, the lord high treasurer, attended there likewise with his white staff ; and I observed he often looked on me with a sour countenance, which I would not seem to regard, but ate more than usual, to fill the court with admiration. I have some private reasons to believe that this visit from his majesty gave Flimnap an opportunity of doing me ill offices to his master. That minister had always been my secret enemy, though he outwardly caressed me more than was usual to the moroseness of his nature. He represented to the emperor the low condition of his treasury ; that I had cost his majesty above a million and a half of *sprugs* (their greatest gold coin) ; and, upon the whole, that it would be advisable in the emperor to take the first fair occasion of dismissing me.

CHAPTER VII

The Author, being informed of a Design to accuse him of High-treason, makes his Escape to Blefuscu — His Reception there.

BEFORE I proceed to give an account of my leaving this kingdom, it may be proper to inform the reader of a private intrigue which had been for two months forming against me.

I had been hitherto, all my life, a stranger to courts. I had indeed heard and read enough of the dispositions of great princes and ministers; but never expected to have found such terrible effects of them in so remote a country, governed, as I thought, by very different laws from those in Europe.

When I was preparing to pay my attendance on the Emperor of Blefuscu, a considerable person at court (to whom I had been very serviceable) came to my house privately at night, in a sedan chair, and, without sending his name, desired admittance. The chairmen were dismissed; I put the chair, with his lordship in it, into my coat-pocket, fastened the door of my house, placed the chair on the table, according to my usual custom, and sat down by it. After the common salutations were over, observing his lordship's countenance full of concern, and inquiring into the reason, he desired I would hear him with patience, in a matter that highly concerned my honor and my life. His speech was to the following effect:

“You are to know,” said he, “that several committees of council have been lately called on your account.

“You are very sensible that Skyresh Bolgolam hath been

your mortal enemy almost ever since your arrival. His original reasons I know not ; but his hatred is much increased since your great success against Blefuscu, by which his glory as admiral is obscured. This lord, in conjunction with Flimnap the high treasurer, whose enmity against you is notorious, Limtoc the general, Lalcon the chamberlain, and Balmuff the grand justiciary, have prepared articles of impeachment against you, for treason and other capital crimes."

This preface made me so impatient, being conscious of my own merits and innocence, that I was going to interrupt, when he entreated me to be silent, and thus proceeded :

" Out of gratitude for the favors you have done me, I procured information of the whole proceedings, and a copy of the articles ; wherein I ventured my head for your service.

"ARTICLES OF IMPEACHMENT AGAINST QUINBUS FLESTRIN,
THE MAN-MOUNTAIN.

" *Article 1.* — That the said Quinbus Flestrin, having brought the imperial fleet of Blefuscu into the royal port, and being afterward commanded by his imperial majesty to seize all the other ships of the said empire of Blefuscu, and reduce that empire to a province, to be governed by a viceroy from hence, and to destroy and put to death, not only all the Big-endian exiles, but likewise all the people of that empire who would not immediately forsake the Big-endian heresy ; he, the said Flestrin, like a false traitor against his most auspicious, serene, imperial majesty, did petition to be excused from the said service, upon pretense of unwillingness to force the consciences, or destroy the liberties and lives, of an innocent people.

" *Article 2.* — That whereas certain ambassadors arrived from the court of Blefuscu, to sue for peace in his majesty's court ; he, the said Flestrin, did, like a false traitor, aid, abet, comfort, and divert the said ambassadors, although he knew them to be

servants to a prince who was lately an open enemy to his imperial majesty, and in open war against his said majesty.

“*Article 3.* — That the said Quinbus Flestrin, contrary to the duty of a faithful subject, is now preparing to make a voyage to the court and empire of Blefuscu, for which he hath received only verbal license from his imperial majesty ; and, under color of the said license, doth falsely and traitorously intend to take the said voyage, and thereby to aid, comfort, and abet the Emperor of Blefuscu, so late an enemy, and in open war with his imperial majesty aforesaid.

“There are some other articles ; but these are the most important, of which I have read you an abstract.

“In the several debates upon this impeachment, it must be confessed that his majesty gave many marks of his great lenity ; often urging the services you had done him, and endeavoring to extenuate your crimes. The treasurer and admiral insisted that you should be put to the most painful and ignominious death, by setting fire to your house at night ; and the general was to attend with twenty thousand men, armed with poisoned arrows, to shoot you on the face and hands.

“Reldresal, principal secretary for private affairs, was commanded by the emperor to deliver his opinion, which he accordingly did ; and therein justified the good thoughts you have of him. He allowed your crimes to be great, but that still there was room for mercy, the most commendable virtue in a prince, and for which his majesty was so justly celebrated. He said, the friendship between you and him was so well known that perhaps they might think him partial. However, in obedience to the command he had received, he would freely offer his sentiments. That if his majesty, in consideration of your services, and pursuant to his own merciful disposition, would please to spare your life, and only give order to put out both your eyes, he humbly conceived that, by this expedient, justice might in some measure be satisfied, and all the world would applaud the

lenity of the emperor, as well as the fair and generous proceedings of those who had the honor to be his counsellors. That the loss of your eyes would be no impediment to your bodily strength, by which you might still be useful to his majesty ; and that blindness is an addition to courage, by concealing dangers from us.

“This proposal was received with the utmost disapprobation by the whole board. Bolgolam, the admiral, could not preserve his temper ; but, rising in a fury, said he wondered how the secretary durst presume to give his opinion for preserving the life of a traitor ; that the services you had performed were the great aggravation of your crimes ; that the same strength, which enabled you to bring over the enemy's fleet, might serve, upon the first discontent, to carry it back ; that he had good reasons to think you were a Big-endian in your heart ; and, therefore, insisted you should be put to death.

“The treasurer was of the same opinion. He showed to what straits his majesty's revenue was reduced by the charge of maintaining you, which would soon grow insupportable ; that the secretary's expedient of putting out your eyes was no remedy against this evil ; that his sacred majesty and the council, who are your judges, were in their own consciences fully convinced of your guilt, which was a sufficient argument to condemn you to death, without the formal proofs required by the strict letter of the law.

“But his imperial majesty, fully determined against capital punishment, was graciously pleased to say, that since the council thought the loss of your eyes too mild a punishment, some other may be inflicted hereafter. And your friend the secretary, humbly desiring to be heard again, in answer to what the treasurer had objected, concerning the great charge his majesty was at in maintaining you, said, that his excellency, who had the sole disposal of the emperor's revenue, might easily provide against that evil, by gradually lessening your establishment ;

by which, for want of sufficient food, you would grow weak and faint, and consequently die in a few months. Neither would the stench of your carcass be then so dangerous, when it should become more than half diminished ; and immediately upon your death, five or six thousand of his majesty's subjects might, in two or three days, cut your flesh from your bones, take it away by cartloads, and bury it in distant parts, to prevent infection, leaving the skeleton as a monument of wonder to posterity.

“Thus, by the great friendship of the secretary, the whole affair was compromised. It was strictly enjoined that the project of starving you by degrees should be kept a secret ; but the sentence of putting out your eyes was entered on the books ; none dissenting except Bolgolam, the admiral.

“In three days your friend the secretary will be directed to come to your house, and read before you the articles of impeachment ; and then to signify the great lenity and favor of his majesty and council, whereby you are only condemned to the loss of your eyes, which his majesty doth not question you will gratefully and humbly submit to.

“I leave to your prudence what measures you will take ; and, to avoid suspicion, I must immediately return in as private a manner as I came.”

His lordship did so ; and I remained alone, under many doubts and perplexities of mind.

It was a custom introduced by this prince and his ministry — very different, as I have been assured, from the practices of former times — that after the court had decreed any cruel execution, either to gratify the monarch's resentment, or the malice of a favorite, the emperor made a speech to his whole council, expressing his great lenity and tenderness, as qualities known and confessed by all the world. This speech was immediately published through the kingdom ; nor did anything terrify the people so much as those encomiums on his majesty's mercy ; because it was observed that the more these praises

were enlarged and insisted on, the more inhuman was the punishment, and the sufferer more innocent. And, as to myself, I must confess, having never been designed for a courtier, either by my birth or education, I was so ill a judge of things that I could not discover the lenity and favor of this sentence, but conceived it rather to be rigorous than gentle. I sometimes thought of standing my trial; for, although I could not deny the facts alleged in the several articles, yet I hoped they would admit of some extenuations. But having in my life perused many state trials, which I ever observed to terminate as the judges thought fit to direct, I durst not rely on so dangerous a decision, in so critical a juncture, and against such powerful enemies. Once I was strongly bent upon resistance; for while I had liberty, the whole strength of that empire could hardly subdue me, and I might easily with stones pelt the metropolis to pieces; but I soon rejected that project with horror, by remembering the oath I had made to the emperor, the favors I received from him, and the high title of *nardac* he conferred upon me.

At last I fixed upon a resolution, for which it is probable I may incur some censure. Having his imperial majesty's license to pay my attendance upon the Emperor of Blefuscu, I took this opportunity, before the three days were elapsed, to send a letter to my friend the secretary, signifying my resolution of setting out that morning for Blefuscu, pursuant to the leave I had got; and, without waiting for an answer, I went to that side of the island where our fleet lay. I seized a large man-of-war, tied a cable to the prow, and, lifting up the anchors, put my coat and shoes (together with my coverlet, which I brought under my arm) into the vessel, and, drawing it after me, between wading and swimming, arrived at the royal port of Blefuscu, where the people had long expected me.

They lent me two guides to direct me to the capital city, which is of the same name. I held the guides in my hands till I

came within two hundred yards of the gate, when I put them down and desired them to go on and signify my arrival to one of the secretaries, and let him know I there waited his majesty's command. I had an answer in about an hour, that his majesty, attended by the royal family, and great officers of the court, was coming out to receive me. I advanced a hundred yards. The emperor and his train alighted from their horses ; the empress and ladies from their coaches ; and I did not perceive they were in any fright or concern. I lay on the ground to kiss his majesty's and the empress' hand. I told his majesty that I was come, according to my promise, and with the license of the emperor my master, to have the honor of seeing so mighty a monarch, and to offer him any service in my power, consistent with my duty to my own prince ; not mentioning a word of my disgrace, because I had no regular information of it.

I shall not trouble the reader with the particular account of my reception at this court, which was suitable to the generosity of so great a prince ; nor of the difficulties I was in for want of a house and bed, being forced to lie on the ground, wrapped up in my coverlet.

CHAPTER VIII

The Author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuscu ; and after some difficulties returns safe to his native Country.

THREE days after my arrival, walking out of curiosity to the northeast coast of the island, I observed, about a half a league off in the sea, something that looked like a boat overturned. I pulled off my shoes and stockings, and, wading two or three hundred yards, I found the object to approach nearer by force of the tide ; and then plainly saw it to be a real boat, which I supposed might by some tempest have been driven from a ship : whereupon I returned immediately toward the city, and desired his imperial majesty to lend me twenty of the tallest vessels he had left, after the loss of his fleet, and three thousand seamen under the command of the vice-admiral. This fleet sailed round, while I went back the shortest way to the coast, where I first discovered the boat. I found the tide had driven it still nearer. The seamen were all provided with cordage which I had beforehand twisted to a sufficient strength.

When the ships came up, I waded till I came within a hundred yards of the boat, after which I was forced to swim till I got up to it. The seamen threw me the end of the cord, which I fastened to a hole in the forepart of the boat, and the other end to a man-of-war ; but I found all my labor to little purpose ; for, being out of my depth, I was not able to work. In this necessity, I was forced to swim behind, and push the boat forward, as often as I could, with one of my hands ; and the tide favoring me, I advanced so far that I

could just hold up my chin and feel the ground. I rested two or three minutes, and then gave the boat another shove, and so on, till the sea was no higher than my armpits, and now, the most laborious part being over, I took out my other cables, which were stowed in one of the ships, and fastened them first to the boat, and then to nine of the vessels which attended me. The wind being favorable, the seamen towed and I shoved, till we arrived within forty yards of the shore; and waiting till the tide was out, I got dry to the boat, and, by the assistance of two thousand men, with ropes, pulleys and levers, I made a shift to turn it on its bottom, and found it was but little damaged.

By the help of certain paddles, which cost me ten days making, I got my boat to the royal port of Blefuscu, where a mighty concourse of people appeared upon my arrival, full of wonder at the sight of so prodigious a vessel. I told the emperor that my good fortune had thrown this boat in my way to carry me to some place whence I might return to my native country; and begged his majesty's orders for getting materials to fit it up, together with his license to depart; which, after some kind expostulations, he was pleased to grant. I did very much wonder, in all this time, at not having any message relating to me from our emperor to the court of Blefuscu. But I was afterward given privately to understand that his imperial majesty, never imagining I had the least notice of his designs, believed I was only gone to Blefuscu, according to the license he had given me, and would return in a few days. But he was at last in pain at my long absence; and, after consulting with the treasurer and the rest of that cabal,^o a person of quality was despatched with the copy of the articles against me.

The envoy had instructions to represent to the monarch of Blefuscu the great lenity of his master, who was content to punish me no further than with the loss of mine eyes; that I had fled from justice; and if I did not return in two hours I should

be deprived of my title of *nardac*, and declared a traitor. The envoy further added, that, in order to maintain the peace and amity between both empires, his master expected that his brother of Blefuscu would give orders to have me sent back to Lilliput, bound hand and foot, to be punished as a traitor.

The Emperor of Blefuscu, having taken three days to consult, returned an answer consisting of many civilities and excuses. He said that, as for sending me bound, his brother knew it was impossible ; that, although I had deprived him of his fleet, yet he owed great obligations to me for many good offices I had done him in making the peace. That, however, both their majesties would soon be made easy ; for I had found a prodigious vessel on the shore, able to carry me on the sea, which he had given orders to fit up, with my own assistance and direction ; and he hoped, in a few weeks, both empires would be freed from so insupportable an encumbrance.

With this answer the envoy returned to Lilliput ; and the monarch of Blefuscu related to me all that had passed ; offering me, at the same time (but under the strictest confidence), his gracious protection, if I would continue in his service : wherein, although I believed him sincere, yet I resolved never more to put any confidence in princes or ministers, where I could possibly avoid it ; and, therefore, with all due acknowledgments for his favorable intentions, I humbly begged to be excused. I told him that, since fortune, whether good or evil, had thrown a vessel in my way, I was resolved to venture myself on the ocean, rather than be an occasion of difference between two such mighty monarchs. Neither did I find the emperor at all displeased ; and I discovered, by accident, that he was very glad of my resolution, and so were most of his ministers.

These considerations moved me to make my departure somewhat sooner than I intended ; to which the court, impatient to have me gone, very readily contributed. Five hundred workmen were employed to make two sails for my boat, according to my

directions, by quilting thirteen folds of their strongest linen together. I was at the pains of making ropes and cables by twisting ten, twenty or thirty of the thickest and strongest of theirs. A great stone that I happened to find, after a long search, by the seashore, served me for an anchor. I had the tallow of three hundred cows for greasing my boat, and other uses. I was at incredible pains in cutting down some of the largest timber-trees for oars and masts ; wherein I was, however, much assisted by his majesty's ship-carpenters, who helped me in smoothing them after I had done the rough work.

In about a month, when all was prepared, I sent to receive his majesty's commands, and to take my leave. The emperor and royal family came out of the palace. I lay down to kiss his hand, which he very graciously gave me. His majesty presented me with fifty purses of two hundred *sprugs* apiece, together with his picture at full length, which I put immediately into one of my gloves, to keep it from being hurt. The ceremonies at my departure were too many to trouble the reader with.

I stored the boat with the carcasses of a hundred oxen and three hundred sheep, with bread and drink proportionable, and as much meat ready dressed as four hundred cooks could provide. I took with me six cows and two bulls alive, with as many ewes and rams, intending to carry them into my own country. And, to feed them on board, I had a good bundle of hay and a bag of corn. I would gladly have taken a dozen of the natives, but this was a thing which the emperor would by no means permit ; and, besides a diligent search into my pockets, his majesty engaged my honor not to carry away any of his subjects, although with their own consent and desire.

Having thus prepared all things as well as I was able, I set sail on the 24th day of September, 1701, at six in the morning ; and when I had gone about four leagues to the northward, the wind being at southeast, at six in the evening I descried a

small island, about half a league to the northwest. I advanced forward, and cast anchor on the lee side of the island. I then took some refreshment, and went to my rest. After I awaked, I ate breakfast ; and, heaving anchor, the wind being favorable, I steered the same course that I had done the day before, wherein I was directed by my pocket compass. My intention was to reach, if possible, one of those islands which I had reason to believe lay to the northeast of Van Diemen's Land.^o

I discovered nothing all that day ; but upon the next, about three in the afternoon, when I had, by my computation, made twenty-four leagues from Blefuscu, I descried a ship steering to the southeast. I hailed her, but could get no answer ; yet I found I gained upon her, for the wind slackened. I made all the sail I could, and in half an hour she spied me, then hung out her flag, and discharged a gun. It is not easy to express the joy I was in, upon the unexpected hope of once more seeing my beloved country, and the dear ones I left in it. The ship slackened her sails, and I came up with her between five and six in the evening, September 26th ; but my heart leaped within me to see her English colors. I put my cows and sheep into my coat-pockets, and got on board with all my little cargo of provisions.

The vessel was an English merchantman, returning from Japan ; the captain, Mr. John Biddel of Deptford, a very civil man and an excellent sailor. There were about fifty men in the ship ; and here I met an old comrade of mine, one Peter Williams, who gave me a good character to the captain. This gentleman treated me with kindness, and desired I would let him know what place I came from last, and whither I was bound ; which I did in few words, but he thought I was raving, and that the dangers I had undergone had disturbed my head ; whereupon I took my black cattle and sheep out of my pocket, which, after great astonishment, clearly convinced him of my veracity. I then

showed him the gold given me by the Emperor of Blefuscu, together with his majesty's picture at full length, and some other rarities of that country. I gave him two purses of two hundred *sprugs* each, and promised, when we arrived in England, to make him a present of a cow and a sheep.

I shall not trouble the reader with a particular account of this voyage, which was very prosperous for the most part. We arrived in the Downs^o on the 13th of April, 1702. I had only one misfortune, that the rats on board carried away one of my sheep. I found her bones in a hole, picked clean from the flesh. The rest of my cattle I got safe on shore, and set them a-grazing in a bowling green at Greenwich,^o where the fineness of the grass made them feed very heartily. I could not possibly have preserved them in so long a voyage, if the captain had not allowed me some of his best biscuit, which rubbed to powder, and mingled with water, was their constant food. The short time I continued in England, I made a considerable profit by showing my cattle to many persons of quality and others; and before I began my second voyage, I sold them for six hundred pounds. Since my last return I find the breed is considerably increased, especially the sheep, which I hope will prove much to the advantage of the woollen manufacture, by the fineness of the fleeces.

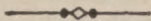
I stayed but two months with my wife and family; for my insatiable desire of seeing foreign countries would suffer me to continue no longer. I left fifteen hundred pounds with my wife, and fixed her in a good house at Redriff.^o My remaining stock I carried with me, part in money and part in goods, in hopes to improve my fortunes. My uncle John had left me an estate in land, near Epping, of about thirty pounds a-year; and I had a long lease of a London inn, which yielded me as much more; so that I was not in any danger of leaving my family upon the parish. My son Johnny, named so after his uncle, was at the grammar-school. My daughter Betty was at her

needlework. I took leave of my wife and boy and girl, with tears on both sides, and went on board the *Adventure*, a merchant ship of three hundred tons, bound for Surat,^o Captain John Nicholas, of Liverpool, commander. But my account of this voyage must be referred to the second part of my travels.

PART II

A VOYAGE TO BROBDINGNAG

A VOYAGE TO BROBDINGNAG



CHAPTER I

A great Storm ; the Long-boat sent to fetch water, the Author goes with it to discover the Country — He is left on shore, is seized by one of the natives, and carried to a Farmer's House — His reception there, with several Accidents that happened — A Description of the Inhabitants.

WE had a very prosperous voyage till we arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, where we landed for fresh water ; but discovering a leak, we wintered there ; and the captain falling sick of an ague, we could not leave the Cape till the end of March. We then set sail, and had a good voyage till we passed the Straits of Madagascar^o ; but having got northward of that island, and to about five degrees south latitude, the winds, which in those seas blow a constant equal gale between the north and west, from the beginning of December to the beginning of May, on the 19th of April began to blow with much greater violence, and more westerly than usual, continuing so for twenty days together. During that time we were driven a little to the east of the Molucca Islands,^o and about three degrees northward of the line, as our captain found by an observation he took the 2d of May. The wind had now ceased, and it was a perfect calm, whereat I was not a little rejoiced. But the captain, being a man

well experienced in the navigation of those seas, bid us all prepare against a storm, and the day following, a southern wind, called the southern monsoon,^o began to set in, and soon it was a very fierce storm.

During this storm, which was followed by a strong wind west-southwest, we were carried, by my computation, about five hundred leagues to the east, so that the oldest sailor on board could not tell in what part of the world we were. Our provisions held out well, our ship was stanch, and our crew all in good health; but we were in the utmost distress for water. We thought it best to hold on the same course, rather than turn more northerly, which might have brought us to the north-west parts of Great Tartary,^o and into the Frozen Sea.

On the 16th day of June, 1703, a boy on the topmast discovered land. On the 17th we came in full view of a great island, or continent, on the south side whereof was a small neck of land jutting out into the sea, and a creek too shallow to hold a ship of above one hundred tons. We cast anchor within a league of this creek, and our captain sent a dozen of his men well armed in the long-boat, with vessels for water, if any could be found. I desired his leave to go with them, that I might see the country, and make what discoveries I could. When we came to land we saw no river or spring, nor any sign of inhabitants. Our men therefore wandered on the shore to find some fresh water near the sea, and I walked alone about a mile on the other side, where I observed the country all barren and rocky.

I now began to be weary, and, seeing nothing to entertain my curiosity, I returned toward the creek; and the sea being full in my view, I saw our men already got into the boat, and rowing to the ship. I was going to halloo after them, although it had been to little purpose, when I observed a huge creature walking after them in the sea, as fast as he could; he waded not much deeper than his knees, and took prodigious

strides ; but our men had got the start of him half a league, and the sea thereabouts being full of sharp pointed rocks, the monster was not able to overtake the boat. This I was afterward told, for I durst not stay to see the issue of that adventure ; but ran as fast as I could the way I first went, and then climbed up a steep hill, which gave me some prospect of the country. I found it fully cultivated ; but that which first surprised me was the length of the grass, which in those grounds that seemed to be kept for hay was above twenty feet high.

I got into a highroad, for so I took it to be, though it served to the inhabitants only as a footpath through a field of barley. Here I walked on for some time, but could see little on either side, it being now near harvest, and the grain rising at least forty feet. I was an hour walking to the end of this field, which was fenced in with a hedge of at least one hundred and twenty feet high, and the trees so lofty that I could make no computation of their altitude. There was a stile to pass from this field into the next. It had four steps, and a stone to cross over when you came to the uppermost. It was impossible for me to climb this stile, because every step was six feet high. I was endeavoring to find some gap in the hedge, when I discovered in the next field, advancing toward the stile, one of the inhabitants of the same size with him whom I saw in the sea pursuing our boat. He appeared as tall as an ordinary church steeple, and took about ten yards at every stride, as near as I could guess.

I was struck with the utmost fear and astonishment, and ran to hide myself in the barley, whence I saw him at the top of the stile, looking back into the field he had just left and heard him call in a voice many degrees louder than a speaking-trumpet ; but the noise was so high in the air that at first I certainly thought it was thunder. Whereupon seven monsters, like himself,^o came toward him with reaping-hooks in their hands, each hook about the largeness of

six scythes. These people were not so well clad as the first, whose servants or laborers they seemed to be ; for, upon some words he spoke, they went to reap the corn in the field where I lay. I kept from them at as great a distance as I could, but was forced to move with extreme difficulty, for the stalks of the corn were sometimes not above a foot apart, so that I could hardly squeeze my body betwixt them. However, I made a shift to go forward till I came to a part of the field where the corn had been laid by the rain and wind. Here it was impossible for me to advance a step ; for the stalks were so interwoven that I could not creep through, and the beards of the fallen ears so strong and pointed that they pierced through my clothes into my flesh. At the same time I heard the reapers not more than a hundred yards behind me.

Being quite dispirited with toil, and wholly overcome by grief and despair, I lay down between two ridges and heartily wished I might there end my days. I bemoaned my desolate widow and fatherless children. I lamented my own folly and wilfulness in attempting a second voyage, against the advice of all my friends and relations. In this terrible agitation of mind I could not forbear thinking of Lilliput, whose inhabitants looked upon me as the greatest prodigy that ever appeared in the world ; where I was able to draw an imperial fleet in my hand, and perform those other actions which will be recorded forever in the chronicles of that empire. I reflected what a mortification it must prove to me to appear as inconsiderable in this nation as one single Lilliputian would be among us. But this I conceived was to be the least of my misfortunes ; for, what could I expect but to be a morsel in the mouth of the first among these enormous barbarians that should happen to seize me ?

Scared and confounded as I was, I could not forbear going on with these reflections, when one of the reapers, approaching within ten yards of the ridge where I lay, made me

apprehend that with the next step I should be squashed to death under his foot, or cut in two with his reaping-hook. And therefore when he was again about to move, I screamed as loud as fear could make me ; whereupon the huge creature trod short, and, looking round about under him for some time, at last espied me as I lay on the ground. He considered awhile, with the caution of one who endeavors to lay hold on a small dangerous animal in such a manner that it may not be either able to scratch or to bite him, as I myself have sometimes done with a weasel in England.

At length he ventured to take me up behind, by the middle, between his forefinger and thumb, and brought me within three yards of his eyes, that he might behold my shape more perfectly. I guessed his meaning, and my good fortune gave me so much presence of mind that I resolved not to struggle in the least as he held me in the air above sixty feet from the ground, although he grievously pinched my sides, for fear I should slip through his fingers. All I ventured was to raise mine eyes toward the sun, and place my hands together in a supplicating posture, and to speak some words in a humble, melancholy tone, suitable to the condition I then was in ; for I apprehended every moment that he would dash me against the ground, as we usually do any little hateful animal which we have a mind to destroy. But my good star would have it that he appeared pleased with my voice and gestures, and began to look upon me as a curiosity, much wondering to hear me pronounce articulate words, although he could not understand them. In the meantime I was not able to forbear groaning and shedding tears, and turning my head toward my sides ; letting him know as well as I could how cruelly I was hurt by the pressure of his thumb and finger. He seemed to apprehend my meaning ; for, lifting up the skirt of his coat, he put me gently into it, and immediately ran along with me to his master, who was a substantial farmer, and the same person I had first seen in the field.

The farmer having (as I supposed by their talk) received such an account of me as his servant could give him, took a piece of a small straw, about the size of a walking-staff, and therewith lifted up the skirts of my coat ; which, it seems, he thought to be some kind of covering that nature had given me. He blew my hair aside to take a better view of my face. He called his men about him, and asked them, as I afterward learned, whether they had ever seen in the fields any little creature that resembled me? He then placed me softly on the ground upon all fours, but I got immediately up, and walked slowly backward and forward, to let those people see I had no intent to run away. They all sat down in a circle about me, the better to observe my motions.

I pulled off my hat, and made a low bow toward the farmer. I fell on my knees, and lifted up my hands and eyes, and spoke several words as loud as I could. I took a purse of gold out of my pocket, and humbly presented it to him. He received it on the palm of his hand, then applied it close to his eye to see what it was, and afterward turned it several times with the point of a pin, but could make nothing of it. Whereupon I made a sign that he should place his hand on the ground. I then took the purse, and opening it, poured all the gold into his palm. There were six Spanish pieces of four pistoles^o each, besides twenty or thirty smaller coins. I saw him wet the tip of his little finger upon his tongue, and take up one of my largest pieces, and then another ; but he seemed to be wholly ignorant what they were. He made me a sign to put them again into my purse, and the purse again into my pocket, which, after offering to him several times, I thought it best to do.

The farmer, by this time, was convinced I must be a rational creature. He spoke often to me ; but the sound of his voice pierced my ears like that of a water-mill, yet his words were articulate enough. I answered as loud as I could in several languages, and he often laid his ear within two yards of me ; but

all in vain, for we were wholly unintelligible to each other. He then sent his servants to their work, and taking his handkerchief out of his pocket, he doubled, and spread it on his left hand, which he placed flat on the ground, with the palm upward, making me a sign to step into it, as I could easily do, for it was not above a foot in thickness. I thought it my part to obey; and for fear of falling laid myself at full length upon the handkerchief, with the remainder of which he lapped me up to the head for further security, and in this manner carried me home to his house. There he called his wife, and showed me to her; but she screamed and ran back, as women in England do at the sight of a toad or a spider. However, when she had awhile seen my behavior, and how well I observed the signs her husband made, she was soon reconciled, and by degrees grew extremely tender of me.

It was about twelve at noon, and a servant brought in dinner. It was only one substantial dish of meat (fit for the plain condition of an husbandman) in a dish of about twenty-four feet diameter. The company were, the farmer and his wife, three children, and an old grandmother. When they were sat down, the farmer placed me at some distance from him on the table, which was thirty feet high from the floor. I was in a terrible fright, and kept as far as I could from the edge, for fear of falling. The wife minced a bit of meat, then crumbled some bread on a trencher, and placed it before me. I made her a low bow, took out my knife and began to eat, which gave them exceeding delight. The mistress sent her maid for a small cup, which held about two gallons, and filled it with drink; I took up the vessel with much difficulty in both hands, and in a most respectful manner drank to her ladyship's health, expressing the words as loud as I could in English, which made the company laugh so heartily, that I was almost deafened with the noise. This liquor tasted like cider, and was not unpleasant.

Then the master made me a sign to come to his trencher side; but as I walked on the table, being in great surprise all the time,

as the indulgent reader will easily conceive and excuse, I happened to stumble against a crust, and fell flat on my face, but received no hurt. I got up immediately, and observing the good people to be in much concern, I took my hat (which I held under my arm out of good manners) and waving it over my head, made three huzzas, to show I had got no mischief by my fall. But advancing forward toward my master (as I shall henceforth call him) his youngest son, who sat next him, a boy of about ten years old, took me up by the legs, and held me so high in the air that I trembled in every limb; but his father snatched me from him, and at the same time gave him such a box on the left ear as would have felled a European troop of horse to the earth, ordering him to be taken from the table. Being afraid the boy might owe me a spite, and well remembering how mischievous all children among us naturally are to sparrows, rabbits, young kittens, and puppy-dogs, I fell on my knees, and, pointing to the boy, made my master to understand, as well as I could, that I desired his son might be pardoned. The father complied, and the lad took his seat again, whereupon I went to him, and kissed his hand, which my master took, and made him stroke me gently with it.

In the midst of dinner my mistress' favorite cat leaped into her lap. I heard a noise behind me like that of a dozen stocking-weavers at work; and turning my head I found it proceeded from the purring of this animal, who seemed to be three times larger than an ox, as I computed by the view of her head and one of her paws, while her mistress was feeding and stroking her. The fierceness of this creature's countenance altogether discomposed me though I stood at the further end of the table, above fifty feet off; and although my mistress held her fast, I feared she might give a spring, and seize me in her talons. But it happened there was no danger; for the cat took not the least notice of me when my master placed me within three yards of her. And, as I have been always told, that flying or showing

fear before a fierce animal is a certain way to make it pursue or attack you, so I resolved, in this dangerous juncture, to show no manner of concern. I walked with intrepidity five or six times before the very head of the cat, and came within a half a yard of her ; whereupon she drew herself back, as if she were afraid of me. I had less apprehension concerning the dogs, though three or four came into the room, one of which was a mastiff, equal in bulk to four elephants, and another a greyhound, somewhat taller than the mastiff, but not so large.

When dinner was almost done the nurse came in with a child a year old in her arms, who immediately spied me, and began a squall that you might have heard for five miles, after the usual oratory of infants, to get me for a plaything. The mother, out of pure indulgence, took me up, and put me toward the child, who presently seized me by the middle, and got my head in his mouth, where I roared so loud that the urchin was frightened, and let me drop, and I should infallibly have broken my neck, if the mother had not held her apron under me. The nurse, to quiet her babe, made use of a rattle, which was a kind of hollow vessel filled with great stones, and fastened by a cable to the child's waist.

When dinner was done my master went out to his laborers, and, as I could discover by his voice and gesture, gave his wife a strict charge to take care of me. I was very tired, and disposed to sleep, which my mistress perceiving she put me on her own bed, and covered me with a clean white handkerchief, but larger and coarser than the mainsail of a man-of-war.

I slept about two hours, and dreamed I was at home with my wife and children, which aggravated my sorrows when I awoke and found myself alone in a vast room, between two and three hundred feet wide, and above two hundred high, lying in a bed twenty yards wide. My mistress was gone about her household affairs, and had locked me in. The bed was eight yards from the floor. I wished to get down, but durst not presume to call ; and if I had it would have been in vain, with such a voice as

mine. While I was waiting two rats crept up the curtains, and ran smelling backward and forward on the bed. One of them came up almost to my face, whereupon I rose in a fright, and drew out my hanger^o to defend myself. These horrible animals had the boldness to attack me on both sides, and one of them held his forefeet at my collar; but I had the good fortune to strike him dead before he could do me any mischief. He fell down at my feet; and the other, seeing the fate of his comrade, made his escape, but not without one good wound on the back, which I gave him as he fled. After this exploit I walked gently to and fro on the bed, to recover my breath and loss of spirits. These creatures were of the size of a large mastiff, but infinitely more nimble and fierce; so that, if I had taken off my sword before I went to sleep, I must have infallibly been torn to pieces and devoured. I measured the tail of the dead rat, and found it to be two yards long, wanting an inch; but it went against my stomach to drag the carcass off the bed, where it lay still bleeding.

Soon afterward my mistress came into the room, who, seeing me all bloody, ran and took me up in her hand. I pointed to the dead rat, smiling, and making other signs to show I was not hurt; whereat she was extremely rejoiced, calling the maid to take up the dead rat with a pair of tongs, and throw it out of the window. Then she set me on a table, where I showed her my hanger all bloody, and wiping it on the skirt of my coat, returned it to the scabbard.

I hope the gentle reader will excuse me for dwelling on these and the like particulars. I have been chiefly studious of truth, without affecting any ornaments of learning or of style. But the whole scene of this voyage made so strong an impression on my mind, and is so deeply fixed in my memory, that, in committing it to paper, I did not omit one material circumstance. However, upon a strict review, I blotted out several passages of less moment, which were in my first copy, for fear of being censured as tedious and trifling.

CHAPTER II

A Description of the Farmer's Daughter — The Author carried to a Market-town, and then to the Metropolis — The Particulars of his Journey.

MY mistress had a daughter nine years old, a bright child for her age, very dexterous at her needle, and skilful in dressing her doll. Her mother and she contrived to fit up the doll's cradle for me to lie in at night. The cradle was put into a small drawer of a bureau, and the drawer placed upon a hanging shelf for fear of the rats. This was my bed all the time I stayed with those people, though made more convenient by degrees, as I began to learn their language, and make my wants known. This young girl was so handy that she made me seven shirts and some other linen, of as fine cloth as could be got, which indeed was coarser than sackcloth ; and these she constantly washed for me with her own hands. She was likewise my schoolmistress, to teach me the language. When I pointed to anything she told me the name of it in her own tongue, so that in a few days I was able to call for whatever I had a mind to. She was very good-natured, and not above forty feet high, being little for her age. She gave me the name of *Grildrig*, which the family took up, and afterward the whole kingdom. The word imports what the English call *manikin*. To her I chiefly owe my preservation in that country. We never parted while I was there. I called her my *Glumdalclitch*, or little nurse, and I should be guilty of great ingratitude if I omitted this honorable mention of her care and affection toward me, which I heartily wish it lay in my power to requite as she deserves.

It now began to be known and talked of in the neighborhood that my master had found a strange animal in the field, about the bigness of a *splacnuck*, but exactly shaped in every part like a human creature ; which it likewise imitated in all its actions ; seemed to speak in a little language of its own, had already learned several words of theirs, went erect upon two legs, was tame and gentle, would come when it was called, do whatever it was bid, had the finest limbs in the world, and a complexion fairer than a nobleman's daughter of three years old. Another farmer, who lived hard by, and was a particular friend of my master, came on a visit on purpose to inquire into the truth of this story. I was immediately produced, and placed upon a table, where I walked as I was commanded, drew my hanger, made my reverence to my master's guest, asked him in his own language how he did, and told him *he was welcome*, just as my little nurse had instructed me. This man, who was old and dim-sighted, put on his spectacles to behold me better, at which I could not forbear laughing very heartily, for his eyes appeared like the full moon shining into a chamber at two windows. Our people, who discovered the cause of my mirth, bore me company in laughing, at which the old fellow was angry and out of countenance. He had the character of a great miser ; and, to my misfortune, he well deserved it, by the advice he gave my master, to show me as a sight upon a market-day in the next town, which was about twenty-two miles from our house.

I guessed there was some mischief contriving, when I observed my master and his friend whispering long together, sometimes pointing at me. But the next morning Glumdalclitch, my little nurse, told me the whole matter, which she had cunningly found out from her mother. The poor girl fell a-weeping with shame and grief. She apprehended some mischief would happen to me from rude, vulgar folks, who might squeeze me to death, or break one of my limbs by taking me in their hands. She said her papa and mamma had promised that Grildrig should be

hers ; but now she found they meant to serve her as they did last year, when they pretended to give her a lamb, and yet, as soon as it was fat, sold it to a butcher. For my own part, I may truly affirm, that I was less concerned than my nurse. I had a strong hope, which never left me, that I should one day recover my liberty ; and as to the ignominy of being carried about for a curiosity, I considered that such a misfortune could never be charged upon me as a reproach, if ever I should return to England ; since the king of Great Britain himself, in my condition, must have undergone the same distress.

My master, pursuant to the advice of his friend, carried me in a box the next market-day to the neighboring town, and took along with him his little daughter, my nurse, upon a pillion,^o behind him. The box was closed on every side, with a little door for me to go in and out, and a few gimlet holes to let in air. The girl had been so careful as to put the quilt of her doll's bed into it, for me to lie down on. However, I was terribly shaken and discomposed in this journey, though it was but of half an hour : for the horse went about forty feet at every step, and trotted so high that the agitation was equal to the rising and falling of a ship in a great storm, but much more frequent. My master alighted at an inn which he used to frequent ; and after consulting awhile with the innkeeper, and making some necessary preparations, he hired the crier,^o to give notice through the town of a strange creature to be seen at the sign of the Green Eagle, not so big as a *splacnuck* (an animal in that country, very finely shaped, about six feet long) and in every part of the body resembling a human creature ; could speak several words, and perform a hundred diverting tricks.

I was placed upon a table in the largest room of the inn, which might be nearly three hundred feet square. My little nurse stood on a low stool close to the table, to take care of me, and direct what I should do. My master, to avoid a crowd, would suffer only thirty people at a time to see me.

I walked about the table as the girl commanded : she asked me questions, as far as she knew my understanding of the language reached, and I answered them as loud as I could. I turned about several times to the company, paid my humble respects, said *they were welcome*, and used some other speeches I had been taught. I took up a thimble filled with liquor, which Glumdalclitch had given me for a cup, and drank their health. I drew out my hanger, and flourished with it after the manner of fencers in England. My nurse gave me part of a straw, which I exercised as a pike, having learned the art in my youth. I was that day shown to twelve sets of company, and as often forced to act over again the same fopperies, till I was half-dead with weariness and vexation : for those who had seen me made such wonderful reports that the people were ready to break down the doors to come in. My master, for his own interest, would not suffer any one to touch me except my nurse : and to prevent danger, benches were set round the table, at such a distance as put me out of everybody's reach. However, a mischievous schoolboy aimed a hazelnut directly at my head, which very narrowly missed me. It came with so much violence that had the aim been true it would have infallibly knocked out my brains, for it was as large as a small pumpkin ; but I had the satisfaction to see the young rogue well beaten and turned out of the room.

My master gave public notice that he would show me again the next market-day ; and in the meantime he prepared a more convenient vehicle for me, which he had reason enough to do ; for I was so tired with my first journey, and with entertaining company for eight hours together, that I could hardly stand upon my legs, or speak a word. It was at least three days before I recovered my strength ; and that I might have no rest at home all the neighboring gentlemen from a hundred miles around, hearing of my fame, came to see me at my master's own house. They were accompanied by their wives and children,

and for some time I had but little ease any day of the week (except Wednesday, which is their Sabbath), although I was not carried to the town.

My master, finding how profitable I was like to be, resolved to carry me to the most considerable cities of the kingdom. Having therefore provided himself with all things necessary for a long journey, and settled his affairs at home, he took leave of his wife, and upon the 17th of August, 1703, about two months after my arrival, we set out for the metropolis, situated near the middle of that empire, and about three thousand miles distance from our house. My master made his daughter Glumdalclitch ride behind him. She carried me on her lap, in a box tied about her waist. The girl had lined it on all sides with the softest cloth she could get, well quilted underneath, furnished it with her doll's bed, provided me with linen and other necessaries, and made everything as convenient as she could. We had no other company but a boy of the house, who rode after us with the luggage.

My master's design was to show me in all the towns by the way, and to go from the main road for fifty or a hundred miles, to any village or person of quality's house, where he might expect custom. We made easy journeys, of not above seven or eight score miles a day: for Glumdalclitch, on purpose to spare me, complained she was tired with the trotting of the horse. She often took me out of my box, at my own desire, to give me air, and show me the country, but always held me fast, by a leading string.^o We passed over five or six rivers, many degrees broader and deeper than the Nile or the Ganges; and there was hardly a rivulet so small as the Thames at London Bridge. We were ten weeks on our journey, and I was shown in eighteen large towns, besides many villages and private families.

On the 26th of October we arrived at the metropolis, called in their language *Lorbrulgrud*, or Pride of the Universe. My master took a lodging in the principal street of the city, not far

from the royal palace, and put out hand bills in the usual form, containing an exact description of my person and accomplishments. He hired a large room between three and four hundred feet wide. He provided a table sixty feet in diameter, upon which I was to act my part, and palisadoed it round three feet from the edge, and as many high, to prevent my falling over. I was shown ten times a day, to the wonder and satisfaction of all people. I could now speak the language tolerably well, and perfectly understood every word that was spoken to me. Besides, I had learned their alphabet, and could make a shift to explain a sentence here and there; for Glumdalclitch had been my instructor while we were at home, and at leisure hours during our journey. She carried a little book in her pocket, not much larger than a Sanson's Atlas.^o It was a common treatise for the use of young girls, giving a short account of their religion. Out of this she taught me my letters, and interpreted the words.

CHAPTER III

The Author is sent for to Court — The Queen buys him of his master, the Farmer, and presents him to the King — He disputes with his Majesty's great Scholars — An Apartment at Court provided for the Author — He is in high favor with the Queen — He defends the honor of his own Country — He quarrels with the Queen's Dwarf.

THE frequent labors I underwent every day made in a few weeks a very considerable change in my health ; the more my master got by me the more insatiable he grew. I had quite lost my appetite and was almost reduced to a skeleton. The farmer observed this, and, concluding that I soon must die, resolved to make as much money out of me as he could. While he was thus reasoning and resolving with himself, a gentleman-usher came from court, commanding my master to carry me immediately thither for the diversion of the queen and her ladies. Some of the latter had already been to see me, and reported strange things of my beauty, behavior, and good sense. Her majesty, and those who attended her, were beyond measure delighted with my demeanor. I fell on my knees, and begged the honor of kissing her imperial foot ; but this gracious princess held out her little finger toward me after I was set on a table, which I embraced in both my arms, and put the tip of it with the utmost respect to my lips. She asked me some general questions about my country and my travels, which I answered as distinctly, and in as few words as I could. She asked, whether I would be content to live at court ?

I bowed down to the board of the table, and humbly answered,

that I was my master's slave ; but if I were at my own disposal I should be proud to devote my life to her majesty's service.

She then asked my master, whether he were willing to sell me at a good price ?

He, who apprehended I could not live a month, was ready enough to part with me, and demanded a thousand pieces of gold, which were ordered given him on the spot, each piece being about the bigness of eight hundred moidores,^o but, allowing for the proportion of all things between that country and Europe, was hardly so great a sum as a thousand guineas would be in England.

I then said to the queen, since I was now her majesty's most humble creature and vassal, I must beg the favor that Glumdalclitch, who had always tended me with so much care and kindness, and understood how to do it so well, might be admitted into her service, and continue to be my nurse and instructor.

Her majesty agreed to my petition, and easily got the farmer's consent, who was glad enough to have his daughter preferred at court, and the girl herself was not able to hide her joy. My late master withdrew, bidding me farewell, and saying he had left me in a good service : to which I replied not a word, only making him a slight bow.

The queen observed my coldness, and when the farmer was gone out of the apartment, asked me the reason. I made bold to tell her majesty that I owed no other obligation to my late master than his not dashing out the brains of a poor harmless creature found by chance in his field ; which obligation was amply recompensed by the gain he had made in showing me through half the kingdom, and the price he had now sold me for ; that the life I had since led was laborious enough to kill an animal of ten times my strength ; that my health was much impaired by the continual drudgery of entertaining the rabble every hour of the day ; and that if my master had not

thought my life in danger, her majesty would not have got so cheap a bargain. But as I was out of all fear of being ill-treated, under the protection of so great and good an empress, the ornament of nature, the darling of the world, the delight of her subjects ; so, I hoped my late master's apprehensions would appear to be groundless ; for I already found my spirits to revive by the influence of her most august presence.

This was the sum of my speech, delivered with great hesitation. The latter part was altogether framed in the style peculiar to that people, whereof I learned some phrases from Glumdalclitch while she was carrying me to court.

The queen, giving great allowance for my defectiveness in speaking, was, however, surprised at so much good sense in so diminutive an animal. She took me in her own hands, and carried me to the king, who was then retired to his cabinet.^o His majesty, a prince of much gravity and austere countenance, not well observing my shape at first view, asked the queen, after a cold manner, how long it was since she grew fond of a *splacnuck* ? for such, it seems, he took me to be, as I lay upon my breast in her majesty's right hand. But this princess, who hath an infinite deal of wit and humor, set me gently on my feet upon the writing desk, and commanded me to give his majesty an account of myself, which I did in a very few words ; and Glumdalclitch, who attended at the cabinet door, and could not endure I should be out of her sight, being admitted, confirmed all that had passed from my arrival at her father's house.

The king, although he is as learned a person as any in his dominions, had been educated in the study of philosophy, and particularly mathematics ; yet, when he observed my shape exactly, and saw me walk erect, before I began to speak, conceived I might be a piece of clock-work contrived by some ingenious artist. But when he heard my voice, and found what I said to be regular and rational, he could not conceal his as-

tonishment. He was by no means satisfied with the relation I gave him of the manner I came into his kingdom, but thought it a story concerted between Glumdalclitch and her father, who had taught me a set of words, to make me sell at a higher price. Upon this imagination, he put several other questions to me, and still received rational answers, no otherwise defective than by a foreign accent, and an imperfect knowledge in the language, with some rustic phrases which I had learned at the farmer's house, and did not suit the polite style of a court.

His majesty sent for three great scholars. These gentlemen, after they had awhile examined my shape with much nicety, were of different opinions concerning me. They all agreed that I was not framed with a capacity of preserving my life, either by swiftness, or climbing of trees, or digging holes in the earth. They observed by my teeth, which they viewed with great exactness, that I was a carnivorous animal; yet, most quadrupeds being an overmatch for me, and field-mice, with some others, too nimble, they could not imagine how I should be able to support myself, unless I fed upon snails and insects, which they offered, by many learned arguments, to evince that I could not possibly do. They observed my limbs to be perfect and finished; and that I had lived several years, as it was manifest from my beard, the stumps whereof they plainly discovered through a magnifying glass. They would not concede me to be a dwarf, because my littleness was beyond all degrees of comparison; for the queen's favorite dwarf, the smallest ever known in that kingdom, was nearly thirty feet high. After much debate, they concluded, unanimously, that I was only *lusus nature*.^o

After this decisive conclusion, I entreated to be heard a word or two. I applied myself to the king, and assured his majesty that I came from a country which abounded with several millions of both sexes, and of my own stature; where the animals, trees, and houses were all in proportion, and where, by consequence, I might be as able to defend myself, and to find suste-

nance as any of his majesty's subjects could do here ; which I took for a full answer to those gentlemen's arguments. To this they only replied with a smile of contempt, saying that the farmer had instructed me very well in my lesson. The king, who had a much better understanding, dismissing his learned men, sent for the farmer, who, by good fortune, was not yet gone out of town. Having, therefore, first examined him privately, and then confronted him with me and the young girl, his majesty began to think that what we told him might possibly be true. He desired the queen to order that particular care should be taken of me. A convenient apartment was provided for Glumdalclitch at court. She had a governess appointed to take care of her education, a maid to dress her, and two other servants for menial offices ; but the care of me was wholly appropriated to herself.

The queen commanded her own cabinet-maker to contrive a box, that might serve me for a bedchamber, after the model that Glumdalclitch and I should agree upon. This man was a most ingenious artisan, and according to my directions, in three weeks, finished for me a wooden chamber, sixteen feet square, and twelve high, with sash-windows, a door, and two closets. The board that made the ceiling was to be lifted up and down by two hinges, to put in a bed, ready furnished by her majesty's upholsterer, which Glumdalclitch took out every day to air, made it with her own hands, and letting it down at night, locked up the roof over me. A skilled workman, who was famous for little curiosities, undertook to make me two chairs, with backs and frames, of a substance not unlike ivory, and two tables, with a bureau to put my things in. The room was quilted on all sides, as well as the floor and the ceiling, to prevent any accident from the carelessness of those who carried me, and to break the force of a jolt when I went in a coach. I desired a lock for my door, to prevent rats and mice from coming in. The smith, after several attempts, made the small-

est that ever was seen among them. I managed to keep the key in a pocket of my own, fearing Glumdalclitch might lose it. The queen likewise ordered the thinnest silks that could be gotten, to make me clothes, not much thicker than an English blanket, very cumbersome till I was accustomed to them. They were after the fashion of the kingdom, partly resembling the Persian, and partly the Chinese, and are a very grave and decent costume.

The queen became so fond of my company, that she could not dine without me. I had a table placed upon the same at which her majesty ate, just at her left elbow, and a chair to sit on. Glumdalclitch stood upon a stool on the floor near my table, to assist and take care of me. I had an entire set of silver dishes and plates, and other necessities, which, in proportion to those of the queen, were not much bigger than what I have seen of the same kind in a London toy-shop, for the furniture of a doll-house. These my little nurse kept in her pocket in a silver box, and gave me at meals as I wanted them, always cleaning them herself.

No person dined with the queen but the two princesses royal, the elder sixteen years old, and the younger at that time thirteen and a month. Her majesty used to put a bit of meat upon one of my dishes, out of which I carved for myself. Her diversion was to see me eat; for the queen (who had, indeed, but a weak stomach) took up, at one mouthful, as much as a dozen English farmers could eat at a meal; which to me was, for some time, a very nauseous sight. She would craunch the wing of a lark, bones and all, between her teeth, although it were nine times as large as that of a full-grown turkey; and put a bit of bread in her mouth as big as two twelve-penny loaves. She drank out of a golden cup, above a hog'shead at a draught. Her knives were twice as large as a scythe, set straight upon the handle. The spoons, forks, and other instruments, were all in the same proportion. I remember

when Glumdaleclitch carried me, out of curiosity, to see some of the tables at court, where ten or a dozen of those enormous knives and forks were lifted up together, I thought I had never till then beheld so terrible a sight.

It is the custom, that every Wednesday (which, as I have before observed, was their Sabbath) the king and queen, with the royal children, dine together in the apartment of his majesty, to whom I was now become a great favorite; and at these times my little chair and table were placed at his left hand, before one of the salt-cellars. This prince took a pleasure in conversing with me, inquiring into the manners, religion, laws, government, and learning of Europe; wherein I gave him the best account I was able. His apprehension was so clear, and his judgment so exact, that he made very wise reflections and observations upon all I said. But, I confess, that, after I had been a little too copious in talking of my own beloved country, of our trade, and wars by sea and land, of our schisms in religion, and parties in the state, the prejudices of his education prevailed so far that he could not forbear taking me up in his right hand, and, stroking me gently with the other, after a hearty fit of laughing, asked me, whether I were a Whig or Tory? Then turning to his first minister, who waited behind him with a white staff, near as tall as the main-mast of one of our ships, he observed, how contemptible a thing was human grandeur, which could be mimicked by such diminutive insects as I; "and yet," said he, "I dare engage these creatures have their titles and distinctions of honor; they contrive little nests and burrows, that they call houses and cities; they make a figure in dress and equipage; they love, they fight, they dispute, they cheat, they betray!" And thus he continued, while my color came and went with indignation, to hear our noble country, the mistress of arts and arms, the seat of virtue, piety, honor, and truth, the pride and envy of the world, so contemptuously treated.

But as I was not in a condition to resent injuries, so upon mature thoughts I began to doubt whether I was injured or not. For, after having been accustomed several months to the sight and converse of this people, and observed every object upon which I cast mine eyes to be of proportionable magnitude, the horror I had first conceived from their bulk and aspect was so far worn off, that, if I had then beheld a company of English lords and ladies in their finery, acting their several parts in the most courtly manner of strutting, and bowing, and prating ; I should have been strongly tempted to laugh as much at them as the king and his grandees did at me. Neither, indeed, could I forbear smiling at myself, when the queen used to place me upon her hand toward a looking-glass, by which both our persons appeared before me in full view together ; and there could be nothing more ridiculous than the comparison ; so that I really began to imagine myself dwindled many degrees below my usual size.

Nothing angered and mortified me so much as the queen's dwarf ; who being of the lowest stature that was ever in that country (for I verily think he was not full thirty feet high) became so insolent at seeing a creature so much beneath him, that he would always affect to swagger and look big as he passed by me in the queen's antechamber, while I was standing on some table, talking with the lords or ladies of the court, and he seldom failed of a smart word or two upon my *littleness* ; against which I could only revenge myself by calling him *brother*, challenging him to wrestle, and such repartees as are usual in the mouths of court pages. One day, at dinner, this malicious little cub was so nettled with something I had said to him, that, raising himself upon the frame of her majesty's chair, he took me up by the middle, as I was sitting down, not thinking any harm, and let me drop into a large silver bowl of cream, and then ran away as fast as he could.

I fell over head and ears, and, if I had not been a good

swimmer, it might have gone very hard with me ; for Glumdalclitch in that instant happened to be at the other end of the room, and the queen was in such a fright that she had not presence of mind to assist me. But my little nurse ran to my relief, and took me out, after I had swallowed above a quart of cream. I was put to bed. However, I received no other damage than the loss of a suit of clothes, which was utterly spoiled. The dwarf was soundly whipped, and as a further punishment, forced to drink up the bowl of cream into which he had thrown me ; neither was he ever restored to favor. Soon afterward the queen bestowed him on a lady of high quality ; so that I saw him no more, to my very great satisfaction ; for I could not tell to what extremity such a malicious urchin might have carried his resentment.

He had before served me a scurvy trick, which set the queen a-laughing, although at the same time she was heartily vexed, and would have immediately discharged him if I had not been so generous as to intercede. Her majesty had taken a marrow-bone upon her plate, and, after knocking out the marrow, placed the bone again in the dish erect. The dwarf, watching his opportunity while Glumdalclitch was gone to the sideboard, mounted the stool she stood on to take care of me at meals, took me up in both hands, and, squeezing my legs together, wedged me into the marrow-bone above my waist, where I stuck for some time, and made a very ridiculous figure. I believe it was near a minute before any one knew what was become of me ; for I thought it below me to cry out.

I was frequently rallied by the queen upon account of my fearfulness ; and she used to ask me whether the people of my country were as great cowards as myself ? The occasion was this : The kingdom is much pestered with flies in summer ; and these odious insects, each of them as big as a lark, hardly gave me any rest while I sat at dinner, with their continual humming and buzzing about my ears. They would some-

times alight upon my victuals, and sometimes they would fix upon my nose or forehead, where they stung me to the quick, smelling very offensively; and I could easily trace that viscous matter, which, our naturalists tell us, enables those creatures to walk with their feet upward on a ceiling. I had much ado to defend myself against these detestable animals, and could not forbear starting when they came on my face. It was the common practice of the dwarf to catch a number of these insects in his hand, as schoolboys do among us, and let them out suddenly under my nose, on purpose to frighten me and divert the queen. My remedy was to cut them in pieces with my knife, as they flew in the air, wherein my dexterity was much admired.

I remember, one morning, Glumdalclitch had set me in my box upon a window-sill, as she usually did on fair days, to give me air (for I durst not venture to let the box be hung on a nail out of the window, as we do with cages in England). I sat down at my table to eat a piece of sweet cake for my breakfast, and above twenty wasps, allured by the smell, came flying into my room, humming louder than the drones of as many bagpipes. Some of them seized my cake, and carried it piecemeal away; others flew about my head and face, confounding me with the noise, and putting me in the utmost terror of their stings. However, I had the courage to rise and draw my hanger, and attack them in the air. I despatched four of them, but the rest got away, and I presently shut my window. These creatures were as large as partridges; I took out their stings, found them an inch and a half long, and as sharp as needles. I carefully preserved them all; and have since shown them, with some other curiosities, in several parts of Europe.

CHAPTER IV

The Country described — A proposal for correcting modern Maps —
The King's Palace and some account of the Metropolis — The
Author's way of travelling — The chief Temple described.

I NOW intend to give the reader a short description of this country, as far as I travelled in it, which was not above two thousand miles round Lorbrulgrud the metropolis ; for the queen, whom I always attended, never went further when she accompanied the king in his journeys of state. The whole extent of this prince's dominions reacheth about six thousand miles in length, and from three to five thousand in breadth : whence, I cannot but conclude that our geographers are in a great error by supposing nothing but sea between Japan and California ; and therefore they ought to correct their maps and charts, by joining this vast tract of land to the northwest parts of America, wherein I shall be ready to lend them my assistance.

The kingdom is a peninsula, terminated to the northeast by a ridge of mountains thirty miles high, which are altogether impassable, by reason of the volcanoes upon the tops : neither do the most learned know what sort of mortals inhabit beyond those mountains, or whether there be any inhabitants at all. On the three other sides it is bounded by the ocean. There is not one seaport in the whole kingdom : and those parts of the coasts into which the rivers issue are so full of pointed rocks, and the sea generally so rough, that there is no venturing with their boats ; so that these people are wholly excluded from any commerce with the rest of the world. But the large rivers are

full of vessels and abound with excellent fish ; for they seldom get any from the sea, because the sea-fish are of the same size with those in Europe, and consequently not worth catching ; whereby it is manifest that nature, in the production of plants and animals of so extraordinary a bulk, is wholly confined to this continent, of which I leave the reasons to be determined by philosophers. However, now and then, they take a whale that happens to be dashed against the rocks, which the common people feed on heartily. These whales I have known so large that a man could hardly carry one upon his shoulders ; and sometimes, for curiosity, they are brought in hampers to Lorbrulgrud. I saw one of them in a dish at the king's table, which passed for a rarity, but I did not observe he was fond of it ; for I think, indeed, the bigness disgusted him, although I have seen one somewhat larger in Greenland.

The country is well inhabited, for it contains fifty-one cities, near an hundred walled towns, and a great number of villages. To satisfy my curious reader, it may be sufficient to describe Lorbrulgrud. This city contains above eighty thousand houses, and about six hundred thousand inhabitants. It is in length three *glomglungs* (which make about fifty-four English miles) and two and a half in breadth ; as I measured it myself in the royal map, made by the king's order, which was laid on the ground on purpose for me, and extended a hundred feet. I paced the diameter and circumference several times barefoot, and, computing by the scale, measured it pretty exactly.

The king's palace is no regular edifice, but a heap of buildings, about seven miles round. The chief rooms are generally two hundred and forty feet high, and broad and long in proportion. A coach was allowed to Glumdalclitch and me, wherein her governess frequently took her out to see the town, or go among the shops ; and I was always of the party, carried in my box ; although the girl, at my own desire, would often take me out and hold me in her hand, that I might more conveniently

view the houses and the people, as we passed along the streets. One day the governess ordered our coachman to stop at several shops, where the beggars, watching their opportunity, crowded to the sides of the coach, and gave me the most horrible spectacles that ever an English eye beheld. There were lice crawling on their clothes. I could see distinctly the limbs of these vermin with my naked eye, much better than those of an European louse through a microscope, and their snouts, with which they rooted like swine.

Besides the large box in which I was usually carried, the queen ordered a smaller one to be made for me, about twelve feet square, and ten high, for the convenience of travelling: because the other was somewhat too large for Glumdalclitch's lap, and cumbersome in the coach. It was made by the same workman, whom I directed in the whole contrivance. This travelling closet was an exact square with a window in the middle of three of the squares, and each window was latticed with iron wire on the outside, to prevent accidents in long journeys. On the fourth side, which had no window, two strong staples were fixed, through which the person that carried me, when I had a mind to be on horseback, put a leathern belt, and buckled it about his waist. This was always the office of some grave, trusty servant in whom I could confide, whether I attended the king and queen in their progresses, or were disposed to see the gardens, or pay a visit to some great lady or minister of state in the court, for I soon began to be known and esteemed among the greatest officers; I suppose more upon account of their majesties' favor than any merit of my own. In journeys, when I was weary of the coach, a servant on horseback would buckle on my box, and place it upon a cushion before him; and there I had a full prospect of the country on three sides, from my three windows. I had, in this closet, a bed, and a hammock hung from the ceiling, two chairs and a table, neatly screwed to the floor, to

prevent being tossed about by the agitation of the horse or the coach. And having been long used to sea voyages, those motions, although sometimes very violent, did not much discompose me.

Whenever I had a mind to see the town, it was always in my travelling closet ; which Glumdalclitch held in her lap in a kind of open sedan, after the fashion of the country, borne by four men, and attended by two others in the queen's livery. The people, who had often heard of me, were very curious to crowd about the sedan, and the girl was complaisant enough to make the bearers stop, and to take me in her hand, that I might be more conveniently seen.

I was very desirous to see the chief temple, and particularly the tower belonging to it, which is reckoned the highest in the kingdom. Accordingly one day my nurse carried me thither, but I may truly say I came back disappointed ; for the height is not above three thousand feet, reckoning from the ground to the highest pinnacle top ; which, allowing for the difference between the size of those people and us in Europe, is no great matter for admiration, nor at all equal in proportion (if I rightly remember) to Salisbury steeple.^o But, not to detract from a nation, to which, during my life, I shall acknowledge myself extremely obliged, it must be allowed, that whatever this famous tower wants in height, is amply made up in beauty and strength. For the walls are nearly a hundred feet thick, built of hewn stone, whereof each is about forty feet square, and adorned on all sides with statues of gods and emperors, cut in marble larger than life, placed in their several niches. I measured a little finger which had fallen down from one of these statues, and lay unperceived among some rubbish, and found it exactly four feet and an inch in length. Glumdalclitch wrapped it up in a handkerchief, and carried it home in her pocket, to keep among other trinkets, of which the girl was very fond, as children at her age usually are.

The king's kitchen is indeed a noble building, vaulted at top, and about six hundred feet high. The great oven is not so wide, by ten paces, as the cupola at St. Paul's cathedral°: for I measured the latter on purpose, after my return. But if I should describe the kitchen-grate, the prodigious pots and kettles, the joints of meat turning on the spits, with many other particulars, perhaps I should be hardly believed; at least a severe critic would be apt to think I enlarged a little, as travellers are often suspected to do. To avoid which censure, I fear I have run too much into the other extreme; and that, if this treatise should happen to be translated into the language of Brobdingnag (which is the general name of that kingdom) and transmitted thither, the king and his people would have reason to complain that I had done them an injury, by a false and diminutive representation.

His majesty seldom keeps above six hundred horses in his stables; they are generally from fifty-four to sixty feet high. But when he goes abroad on solemn days, he is attended, for state, by a militia guard of five hundred horse, which indeed I thought was the most splendid sight that could be ever beheld, till I saw part of his army in battle array, whereof I shall find another occasion to speak.

CHAPTER V

Several Adventures that happened to the Author—The Author shows his skill in Navigation.

I SHOULD have lived happy enough in that country if my littleness had not exposed me to several ridiculous and troublesome accidents; some of which I shall venture to relate. Glumdalclitch often carried me into the gardens of the court in my smaller box, and would sometimes take me out of it, and hold me in her hand, or set me down to walk. I remember, before the dwarf left the queen, he followed us one day into those gardens, and my nurse having set me down, he and I being close together, near some dwarf apple-trees, I must needs show my wit, by a silly allusion comparing him and the trees. Whereupon, the malicious rogue, watching his opportunity when I was walking under one of them, shook it directly over my head, by which a dozen apples, each of them nearly as large as a barrel, came tumbling about my ears. One of them hit me on the back as I chanced to stoop, and knocked me down flat on my face; but I received no other hurt, and the dwarf was pardoned at my desire, because I had given the provocation.

Another day Glumdalclitch left me on a smooth grassplot to divert myself, while she walked at some distance with her governess. In the meantime there suddenly fell such a violent shower of hail that I was immediately, by the force of it, struck to the ground; and when I was down the hailstones gave me cruel bangs all over the body. However, I made a shift to creep on all fours, and shelter myself, by lying flat on my face,

on the lee-side of a border of thyme ; but so bruised from head to foot that I could not go abroad in ten days.

A more dangerous accident happened to me in the same garden. My little nurse, believing she had put me in a secure place, and having left my box at home, to avoid the trouble of carrying it, went to another part of the gardens, with her governess and some ladies of her acquaintance. While she was absent, and out of hearing, a small white spaniel, belonging to one of the chief gardeners, got by accident into the garden and happened to range near the place where I lay. The dog following the scent came directly up, and taking me in his mouth, ran to his master, wagging his tail, and set me gently on the ground. By good fortune he had been so well taught that I was carried between his teeth without the least hurt, or even tearing my clothes. But the poor gardener, who knew me well, and had a great kindness for me, was in a terrible fright ; he gently took me up in both his hands, and asked me how I did ? but I was so amazed and out of breath that I could not speak a word. In a few minutes I came to myself, and he carried me safe to my little nurse, who by this time had returned to the place where she left me, and was in cruel agonies when I did not appear, nor answer when she called. She severely reprimanded the gardener on account of his dog. But the thing was hushed up, and never known at court, for the girl was afraid of the queen's anger ; and truly, as to myself, I thought it would not be for my reputation that such a story should go about.

This accident absolutely determined Glumdalclitch never to trust me abroad for the future out of her sight. I had been long afraid of this resolution, and therefore concealed from her some little unlucky adventures that happened in those times when I was left by myself. Once a hawk hovering over the garden made a stoop at me, and if I had not resolutely drawn my hanger, and run under a thick trellis, he would have certainly carried me away in his talons. Another time, walking

to the top of a fresh molehill, I fell to my neck in the hole through which that animal had cast up the earth, and had to invent an excuse for spoiling my clothes. I likewise broke my right shin against the shell of a snail, which I happened to stumble over, as I was walking alone.

I cannot tell whether I was more pleased or mortified to observe, in those solitary walks, that the smaller birds did not appear to be at all afraid of me, but would hop about within a yard distance, looking for worms and other food, with as much indifference and security as if no creature at all were near them. I remember, a thrush had the confidence to snatch out of my hand, with his bill, a piece of cake that Glumdalclitch had just given me for my breakfast. When I attempted to catch any of these birds they would boldly turn against me, endeavoring to peck my fingers, which I durst not venture within their reach; and then they would turn back unconcerned, to hunt for worms or snails, as they did before. But one day, I took a thick cudgel, and threw it with all my strength so luckily at a linnet that I knocked him down, and seizing him by the neck with both my hands, ran with him in triumph to my nurse. However, the bird, who had only been stunned, recovering himself, gave me so many boxes with his wings on both sides of my head and body, though I held him at arm's length, and was out of the reach of his claws, that I let him go. This linnet, as near as I can remember, seemed to be somewhat larger than an English swan.

The queen, who often used to hear me talk of my sea voyages, and took all occasions to divert me when I was melancholy, asked me whether I understood how to handle a sail or an oar, and whether a little exercise of rowing might not be convenient for my health? I answered that I understood both very well; for although my proper employment had been to be surgeon or doctor to the ship, yet often upon a pinch I was forced to work like a common mariner. But I could not see

how this could be done in their country, where the smallest wherry was equal to a first-rate man-of-war among us ; and such a boat as I could manage would never live in any of their rivers. Her majesty said, if I would draw a plan of a boat, her own joiner should make it, and she would provide a place for me to sail in. The fellow was an ingenious workman, and by my instructions, finished a pleasure-boat, with all its tackling, able conveniently to hold eight Europeans.

When it was finished the queen was so delighted that she ran with it in her lap to the king, who ordered it to be put into a cistern full of water, with me in it, by way of trial, where I could not manage my two sculls, or little oars, for want of room. Then the queen ordered the joiner to make a wooden trough three hundred feet long, fifty broad, and eight deep ; which, being well pitched, to prevent leaking, was placed on the floor, along the wall, in an outer room of the palace. It had a faucet near the bottom to let out the water, when it began to grow stale ; and two servants could easily fill it in half an hour. Here I often used to row for my own diversion, as well as that of the queen and her ladies, who thought themselves well entertained with my skill and agility. Sometimes I would put up my sail, and then my business was only to steer, while the ladies gave me a gale with their fans ; and, when they were weary, some of their pages would blow my sail forward with their breath, while I showed my art by steering starboard or larboard as I pleased. When I had done, Glumdalclitch always carried back my boat into her closet, and hung it on a nail to dry.

In this exercise I once met an accident which had like to have cost me my life ; for, one of the pages having put my boat into the trough, the governess who attended Glumdalclitch very officiously lifted me up, to place me in the boat ; but I happened to slip through her fingers, and should have infallibly fallen down forty feet, on the floor, if, by the luckiest chance in the

world, I had not been stopped by a large pin that stuck in the good gentlewoman's stomach. The head of the pin passed between my shirt and the waistband of my breeches, and thus I was held in the air till Glumdalclitch ran to my relief.

Another time, one of the servants, whose office it was to fill my trough every third day with fresh water, was so careless as to let a huge frog slip out of his pail. The frog lay concealed till I was put into my boat, but then, seeing a resting-place, climbed up, and made it lean so much on one side that I was forced to balance it with all my weight on the other, to prevent overturning. When the frog was got in it hopped at once half the length of the boat; and then over my head, backward and forward, daubing my face and clothes with its odious slime. The largeness of its features made it appear the most deformed animal that can be conceived. However, I desired Glumdalclitch to let me deal with it alone. I banged it a good while with one of my sculls, and at last forced it to leap out of the boat.

But the greatest danger I ever underwent in that kingdom was from a monkey, who belonged to one of the clerks of the kitchen. Glumdalclitch had locked me up in her room, while she went somewhere upon business or a visit. The weather being very warm, the room window was left open, as well as the windows and the door of my bigger box, in which I usually lived, because of its largeness and conveniency. As I sat quietly meditating at my table I heard something bounce in at the window of the room, and skip about from one side to the other. Although I was much alarmed, I ventured to look out; and then I saw this frolicsome animal frisking and leaping up and down, till at last he came to my box, which he seemed to view with great pleasure and curiosity, peeping in at the door and every window.

I retreated to the further corner of my room or box; but the monkey, looking in at every side, put me into such a fright that I wanted presence of mind to conceal myself under the bed, as

I might easily have done. After some time spent in peeping, grinning, and chattering, he at last espied me; and, reaching one of his paws in at the door, although I often shifted place to avoid him, he at length caught hold of the skirt of my coat (which, being made of that country cloth, was very thick and strong) and dragged me out. He took me up in his right fore-foot; and when I offered to struggle he squeezed me so hard that I thought it more prudent to submit. I have good reason to believe that he took me for a young one of his own species; by his often stroking my face very gently with his other paw.

In these diversions he was interrupted by a noise at the door of the room, as if somebody were opening it, whereupon he suddenly leaped up to the window at which he had come in, and thence to the conduits and gutters, walking upon three legs, and holding me with the fourth, till he clambered up to a roof that was next to ours. I heard Glumdalclitch give a shriek at the moment he was carrying me out. The poor girl was almost distracted. That quarter of the palace was all in an uproar. The servants ran for ladders. The monkey was seen by hundreds in the court sitting upon the ridge of a building, holding me like a baby in one of his forepaws, and feeding me with the other, by cramming into my mouth some victuals he had squeezed out of the pouch on one side of his jaws,^o and patting me when I would not eat; whereat the rabble below could not forbear laughing; neither do I think they justly ought to be blamed, for without question the sight was ridiculous enough to everybody but myself. Some of the people threw up stones, hoping to drive the monkey down; but this was strictly forbidden, or else, very probably, my brains had been dashed out.

The ladders were now applied, and mounted by several men, which the monkey observing, and finding himself almost encompassed, not being able to make speed enough with his three legs, let me drop on a ridge tile, and made his escape. Here I sat for some time, three hundred yards from the ground, ex-

pecting every moment to be blown down by the wind, or to fall by my own giddiness, and come tumbling over and over from the ridge to the eaves; but an honest lad, one of my nurse's footmen, climbed up, and, putting me into his breeches pocket, brought me down safe.

I was almost choked with the filthy stuff the monkey had crammed down my throat; but presently I fell a-vomiting, which gave me great relief. Yet I was so weak and bruised in the sides by the squeezes given me by this odious animal that I was forced to keep my bed a fortnight. The king, queen, and all the court, sent every day to inquire after my health; and her majesty made me several visits during my sickness. The monkey was killed, and an order made that no such animal should be kept about the palace.

When I attended the king after my recovery, to return him thanks for his favors, he was pleased to rally me a good deal upon this adventure. He asked me what my thoughts and speculations were while I lay in the monkey's paw; how I liked the victuals he gave me; his manner of feeding; and whether the fresh air on the roof had sharpened my stomach? He desired to know what I would have done upon such an occasion in my own country.

I told his majesty that in Europe we had no monkeys, except such as were brought for curiosities from other places, and so small that I could deal with a dozen of them together, if they presumed to attack me. And as for that monstrous animal with whom I was so lately engaged (it was indeed as large as an elephant) if my fears had suffered me to think so far as to make use of my hanger (looking fiercely, and clapping my hand upon the hilt as I spoke) when he poked his paw into my chamber, perhaps I should have given him such a wound as would have made him glad to withdraw it with more haste than he put it in. This I delivered in a firm tone, like a person who was jealous lest his courage should be called in

question. However, my speech produced nothing else besides loud laughter, which all the respect due to his majesty from those about him could not make them contain. This made me reflect how vain an attempt it is for a man to endeavor doing himself honor among those who are out of all degree of equality or comparison with him.

L. of C.

CHAPTER VI

Several contrivances of the Author to please the King and Queen — He shows his skill in Music — The King inquires into the state of England, which the Author relates to him — The King's observations thereon.

I USED to attend the king's levee once or twice a week, and had often seen him under the barber's hand, which, indeed, was at first very terrible to behold ; for the razor was almost twice as long as an ordinary scythe. His majesty, according to the custom of the country, was only shaved twice a week. I once prevailed on the barber to give me some of the suds or lather, out of which I picked forty or fifty of the strongest stumps of hair. I then took a piece of fine wood, and cut it like the back of a comb, making holes in it at equal distance with as small a needle as I could get from Glumdalclitch. I fixed in the stumps scraping and sloping them with my knife toward the points, so that I made a very tolerable comb ; which was a seasonable supply, my own being so much broken in the teeth that it was almost useless : neither did I know any workman in that country so nice and exact as would undertake to make me another.

And this puts me in mind of an amusement, wherein I spent many of my leisure hours. I desired the queen's woman to save for me the combings of her majesty's hair, whereof in time I got a good quantity ; and consulting with my friend the cabinet maker, who had received orders to do little jobs for me, I directed him to make two chair-frames, no larger than those I

had in my box, and then to bore little holes with a fine awl round those parts where I designed the backs and seats. Through these holes I wove the strongest hairs I could pick out, just after the manner of cane chairs in England. When they were finished I made a present of them to her majesty, who kept them in her cabinet, and used to show them for curiosities, as indeed they were the wonder of every one that beheld them. The queen would have had me sit upon one of these chairs, but I absolutely refused to obey her, protesting I would rather die a thousand deaths than sit on those precious hairs that once adorned her majesty's head. Of these hairs (as I had always a mechanical genius) I likewise made a neat little purse, about five feet long, which I gave to Glumdalclitch by the queen's consent. To say the truth, it was more for show than use, being not of strength to bear the weight of the larger coins, and therefore she kept nothing in it but some little toys that girls are fond of.

The king, who delighted in music, had frequent concerts at court, to which I was sometimes carried, and set in my box on a table to hear them: but the noise was so great that I could hardly distinguish the tunes. I am confident that all the drums and trumpets of a royal army, beating and sounding together just at your ears, could not equal it. My practice was to have my box removed from the places where the performers sat as far as I could, then to shut the doors and windows of it, and draw the window-curtains; after which I found their music not disagreeable.

I had learned in my youth to play a little upon the spinet.^o Glumdalclitch kept one in her chamber, and a master attended twice a week to teach her. I call it a spinet, because it somewhat resembled that instrument, and was played upon in the same manner. A fancy came into my head that I would entertain the king and queen with an English tune upon this instrument. But this appeared extremely difficult: for the spinet

was nearly sixty feet long, each key being almost a foot wide, so that with my arms extended I could not reach to above five keys, and to press them down required a good smart stroke with my fist, which would be too great a labor, and to no purpose. The method I contrived was this : I prepared two round sticks about the bigness of common cudgels ; they were thicker at one end than the other, and I covered the thicker ends with a piece of a mouse's skin, that by rapping on them I might neither damage the tops of the keys, nor interrupt the sound. Before the spinet a bench was placed, about four feet below the keys, and I was put on the bench. I ran sidelong upon it, that way and this, as fast as I could, banging the proper keys with my two sticks, and made a shift to play a jig, to the great satisfaction of both their majesties ; but it was the most violent exercise I ever underwent ; and yet I could not strike above sixteen keys, nor consequently play the bass and treble together, as other artists do ; which was a great disadvantage to my performance.

The king, who, as I before observed, was a prince of excellent understanding, would frequently order that I should be brought in my box, and set upon the table in his private apartment : he would then command me to bring one of my chairs out of the box, and sit down within three yards' distance upon the top of the box, which brought me almost to a level with his face. In this manner I had several conversations with him. I one day took the freedom to tell his majesty that the contempt he discovered toward Europe, and the rest of the world, did not seem answerable to those excellent qualities of mind that he was master of ; that reason did not extend itself with the bulk of the body. On the contrary, we observed in our country that the tallest persons were usually least provided with it ; that among other animals, bees and ants had the reputation of more industry, art, and sagacity, than many of the larger kinds ; and that, as inconsiderable as he took me to be, I hoped I might

live to do his majesty some signal service. The king heard me with attention, and began to conceive a much better opinion of me than he had ever before. He desired I would give him as exact an account of the government of England as I possibly could; because, as fond as rulers commonly are of their own customs, he should be glad to hear of anything that might deserve imitation.

I began by informing his majesty that our dominions consisted of two islands, which composed three mighty kingdoms, under one sovereign, besides our colonies in America. I dwelt long upon the fertility of our soil, and the excellence of our climate. I then spoke upon the constitution of an English parliament; partly made up of an illustrious body, called the House of Peers; persons of the noblest blood, and of the most ancient and ample patrimonies. To these were joined several holy persons, as part of that assembly, under the title of bishops; whose peculiar business it is to take care of religion, and of those who instruct the people therein.

That the other part of the parliament consisted of an assembly called the House of Commons, who were all principal gentlemen, freely picked and culled out by the people themselves, for their great abilities and love of their country, to represent the wisdom of the whole nation. And that these two bodies made up the most august assembly in Europe; to whom, in conjunction with the prince, the whole legislation is committed.

I then descended to the courts of justice; over which the judges, those venerable sages and interpreters of the law, presided, for determining the disputed rights and properties of men, as well as for the punishment of vice and protection of innocence. I mentioned the prudent management of our treasury; the valor and achievements of our forces, by sea and land. I did not omit even our sports and pastimes, or any other particular which I thought might redound to the honor of my

country. And I finished all with a brief historical account of affairs and events in England for about a hundred years past.

This conversation was not ended under five audiences, each of several hours ; and the king heard the whole with great attention, frequently taking notes of what I spoke.

When I had put an end to these long discourses, his majesty, in a sixth audience, consulting his notes, proposed many doubts, queries, and objections upon every article. He asked what methods were used to cultivate the minds and bodies of our young nobility, and in what kind of business they commonly spent the first and teachable part of their lives ? What share of knowledge these lords had in the laws of their country, and how they came by it, so as to enable them to decide the properties of their fellow-subjects in the last resort ? Whether they were always so free from avarice, partialities, or want, that a bribe, or some other sinister view, could have no place among them ? Whether those *holy* lords I spoke of were always promoted to that rank upon account of their knowledge in religious matters, and the sanctity of their lives ; had never been slavish chaplains to some nobleman, whose opinions they continued servilely to follow, after they were admitted into that assembly ?

He then desired to know what arts were practised in electing those whom I called commoners ; whether a person, with a strong purse, might not influence the vulgar voters. He multiplied his questions, and sifted me thoroughly.

Upon what I said in relation to our courts of justice, his majesty desired to be satisfied in several points. He asked me what time we usually spent in determining between right and wrong, and what degree of expense ? Whether advocates and orators had liberty to plead in causes manifestly known to be unjust, vexatious, or oppressive ? He wondered to hear me talk of such expensive wars. That certainly we must be a quarrelsome people, or live among very bad neighbors. He asked what business we had out of our own islands, unless

upon the score of trade, or treaty, or to defend the coasts with our fleet?

He observed, that, among the diversions of our nobility and gentry, I had mentioned gaming. He desired to know at what age this entertainment was usually taken up, and when it was laid down; how much of their time it employed; whether it ever affected their fortunes; whether mean, vicious people, by their dexterity in that art, might not arrive at great riches, and sometimes keep our very nobles in dependence, as well as habituate them to vile companions?

He was perfectly astonished with the historical account I gave him of our affairs during the last century; protesting, it was only a heap of conspiracies, rebellions, murders, massacres, revolutions, banishments — the very worst effects that avarice, faction, hypocrisy, cruelty, madness, hatred, envy, malice, or ambition could produce.

His majesty, in another audience, was at the pains to recapitulate the sum of all I had spoken; compared the questions he made with the answers I had given; then, taking me into his hands, and stroking me gently, delivered himself in these words, which I shall never forget, nor the manner he spoke them in: “My little friend Grildrig, you have made a most admirable panegyric upon your country. You have clearly proved that ignorance, idleness, and vice are the proper ingredients for qualifying a legislator. The laws are best explained, interpreted, and applied, by those whose interests and abilities lie in perverting, confounding, and eluding them. As for yourself,” continued the king, “who have spent the greatest part of your life in travelling, I am well disposed to hope you may hitherto have escaped many vices of your country. But, by what I have gathered from your own relation, and the answers I have with much pains extorted from you, I cannot but conclude the bulk of your natives to be the most pernicious race of little odious vermin that Nature ever suffered to crawl upon the surface of the earth.”

CHAPTER VII

The Author's love of his Country — He makes a proposal of much advantage to the King, which is rejected — The King's great ignorance in Politics — The Learning of that Country very imperfect and confined — Their Laws, and Military Affairs, and Parties in the State.

It was in vain to discover my resentments ; and I was forced to rest with patience, while my noble and most beloved country was so injuriously treated. I am as heartily sorry as any of my readers can possibly be that such an occasion was given ; but this prince happened to be so curious and inquisitive, that it could not consist either with gratitude or good manners to refuse giving him what satisfaction I was able. Yet this much I may be allowed to say in my own vindication, that I artfully eluded many of his questions, and gave to every point a more favorable turn, than the strictness of truth would allow.

But great allowances should be given to a king, who lives wholly secluded from the rest of the world, and must, therefore, be altogether unacquainted with the manners and customs that most prevail in other nations ; the want of which knowledge will ever produce many prejudices, and a certain narrowness of thinking, from which we, and the politer countries of Europe, are wholly exempted ; and it would be hard, indeed, if so remote a prince's notions of virtue and vice were to be offered as a standard for all mankind.

To further show the miserable effects of a confined education, I shall here insert a passage that will hardly obtain belief. In

hopes to ingratiate myself further into his majesty's favor, I told him of an invention, discovered between three and four hundred years ago, to make a certain powder, into a heap of which the smallest spark of fire falling would kindle the whole in a moment, although it were as big as a mountain, and make it all fly up in the air together, with a noise and agitation greater than thunder. That a proper quantity of this powder, rammed into a hollow tube of brass or iron, would drive a ball of iron or lead with such violence and speed as nothing was able to sustain its force. That the largest balls, thus discharged, would not only destroy whole ranks of an army at once, but batter the strongest walls to the ground, sink ships, with a thousand men in each, to the bottom of the sea; and, when linked together by a chain, would cut through masts and rigging, divide hundreds of bodies in the middle, and lay all waste before them. That we often put this powder into large hollow balls of iron, and discharged them by an engine into some city we were besieging, which would rip up the pavements, tear the houses to pieces, burst and throw splinters on every side, dashing out the brains of all who came near. That I knew the ingredients very well, which were cheap and common; I understood the manner of compounding them, and could direct his workmen how to make those tubes, of a size proportionable to all other things in his majesty's kingdom, and the largest need not be above a hundred feet long; twenty or thirty of which tubes, charged with the proper quantity of powder and balls, would batter down the walls of the strongest town in his dominions in a few hours, or destroy the whole metropolis, if ever it should pretend to dispute his absolute commands. This I humbly offered to his majesty, as a small tribute of acknowledgment, in return of so many marks that I had received of his royal favor and protection.

The king was struck with horror at the description I had given of those terrible engines, and the proposal I had made.

He was amazed how so impotent and grovelling an insect as I (these were his expressions) could entertain such inhuman ideas, and in so familiar a manner as to appear wholly unmoved at all the scenes of blood and desolation which I had described as the common effects of those destructive machines : whereof, he said, some evil genius, enemy to mankind, must have been the first contriver. As for himself, he protested, that although few things delighted him so much as new discoveries in art or in nature, yet he would rather lose half his kingdom than be privy to such a secret ; which he commanded me, as I valued my life, never to mention any more.

A strange effect of narrow principles and short views ! that a prince possessed of every quality which procures veneration, love, and esteem ; of great wisdom, and profound learning, should, from an unnecessary scruple, whereof in Europe we can have no conception, let slip an opportunity put into his hands which would have made him absolute master of the lives, the liberties, and the fortunes of his people ! I take this defect to have risen from ignorance, they not having hitherto reduced politics into a science, as the more acute wits of Europe have done. For, I remember very well, in a discourse one day with the king, when I happened to say there were several thousand books among us written upon the art of government, it gave him (directly contrary to my intention) a very mean opinion of our understandings. He confined the knowledge of governing within very narrow bounds, to common sense and reason, to justice and lenity, to the speedy determination of civil and criminal causes ; with some other obvious topics which are not worth considering. He gave it for his opinion, that, whoever could make two ears of corn, or two blades of grass, to grow upon a spot of ground where only one grew before, would deserve better of mankind, and do more essential service to his country, than the whole race of politicians put together.

No law of that country must exceed in words the number of

letters in their alphabet, which consists only of twenty-two. They are expressed in the most plain and simple terms, wherein those people are not keen enough to discover above one interpretation: and to write a comment upon any law is a capital crime.

They have had the art of printing, time out of mind: but their libraries are not very large; for that of the king's, which is reckoned the biggest, doth not amount to above a thousand volumes. It is placed in a gallery twelve hundred feet long, whence I had liberty to borrow what books I pleased. The queen's joiner had contrived, in one of Glumdalclitch's rooms, a kind of wooden machine, twenty-five feet high, formed like a standing ladder. The steps were each fifty feet long. It was indeed a movable pair of stairs, the lowest end placed at ten feet distance from the wall of the chamber. The book I had a mind to read was put up leaning against the wall. I first mounted to the upper step of the ladder, and turning my face toward the book, began at the top of the page, and so walking to the right and left about eight or ten paces according to the length of the lines, till I had gotten a little below the level of mine eyes, and then descending gradually till I came to the bottom; after which I mounted again, and began the other page in the same manner. That finished, I turned over the leaf, which I could easily do with both my hands, for it was as thick and stiff as pasteboard, and in the largest folios not above eighteen or twenty feet long.

Their style is clear, vigorous, and smooth, but not florid; for they avoid nothing more than multiplying unnecessary words. I have perused many of their books, especially those in history and morality. Among the rest, I was much diverted with a little old treatise, which always lay in Glumdalclitch's bedchamber, and belonged to her governess, a grave elderly gentlewoman, who dealt in writings of morality and devotion. The book treats of the weakness of human kind, and is in little esteem, except among the women and the uncultured.

However, I was curious to see what an author of that country could say upon such a subject. This writer went through all the usual topics of European moralists, showing, "how diminutive, contemptible, and helpless an animal was man in his own nature ; how unable to defend himself from inclemencies of the air, or the fury of wild beasts ; how much he was excelled by one creature in strength, by another in speed, by a third in foresight, by a fourth in industry." He added, "that nature was degenerated in these latter declining ages of the world, and it was very reasonable to think, not only that the species of man were originally much larger, but also that there must have been giants in former ages ; which, as it is asserted by history and tradition, so it hath been confirmed by huge bones and skulls, casually dug up in several parts of the kingdom, far exceeding the common, dwindled race of men in our days." He argued, "that the very laws of nature absolutely required we should have been made, in the beginning, of a size more large and robust ; not so liable to destruction from every little accident, of a tile falling from a house, or a stone cast from the hand of a boy, or of being drowned in a little brook." From this way of reasoning the author drew several moral applications, useful in the conduct of life, but needless here to repeat.

As to their military affairs, they boast that the king's army consists of a hundred and seventy-six thousand foot and thirty-two thousand horse : if that may be called an army, which is made up of tradesmen in the several cities, and farmers in the country, whose commanders are only the nobility and gentry, without pay or reward.

I have often seen the militia of Lorbrulgrud drawn out to exercise in a great field near the city, twenty miles square. They were in all not above twenty-five thousand foot and six thousand horse ; but it was impossible for me to compute their number, considering the space of ground they took up.

A cavalier, mounted on a large steed, might be about ninety feet high. I have seen this whole body of horse, upon a word of command, draw their swords at once, and brandish them in the air. Imagination can figure nothing so grand, so surprising, and so astonishing! It looked as if ten thousand flashes of lightning were darting at the same time from every quarter of the sky.

I was curious to know how this prince, to whose dominions there is no access from any other country, came to think of armies, or to teach his people the practice of military discipline. But I was soon informed, both by conversation, and reading their histories; for, in the course of many ages, they have been troubled with the same disease to which many other governments are subject; the nobility often contending for power, the people for liberty, and the king for absolute dominion, all which have been sometimes violated by each of the three parties, and have once or more occasioned civil wars; the last whereof was happily put an end to by this prince's grandfather.

CHAPTER VIII

The King and Queen make a progress to the frontiers — The Author attends them — The manner in which he leaves the Country very particularly related — He returns to England.

I HAD always a strong impression that I should some time recover my liberty, though it was impossible to conjecture by what means, or to form any project with the least hope of succeeding. The ship in which I sailed was the first ever known to be driven within sight of that coast, and the king had given strict orders that if at any time another appeared it should be taken ashore, and, with all its crew and passengers, brought in a cart to Lorbrulgrud. I was treated with much kindness. I was the favorite of a great king and queen, and the delight of the whole court ; but it was upon such a footing as ill became the dignity of human kind. I wanted to be among people with whom I could converse upon even terms, and walk about the streets and fields without fear of being trodden to death. But my deliverance came sooner than I expected.

I had now been two years in the country ; and about the beginning of the third Glumdalclitch and I attended the king and queen to the south coast of the kingdom. I was carried, as usual, in my travelling-box, which, as I have already described, was a very convenient closet twelve feet wide. And I had ordered a hammock to be fixed, by silken ropes, from the four corners at the top, to break the jolts when a servant carried me before him on horseback ; and would often sleep in

my hammock while we were upon the road. On the roof of my closet I ordered the joiner to cut a hole a foot square, to give me air in hot weather, as I slept; which hole I shut at pleasure with a board that drew backward and forward through a groove.

When we came to our journey's end, the king thought proper to pass a few days at a palace he hath near Flanflasnic, a city within eighteen English miles of the seaside. Glumdalclitch and I were much fatigued. I had gotton a small cold, but the poor girl was so ill as to be confined to her chamber. I longed to see the ocean, which must be the scene of my escape, if ever it should happen. I pretended to be worse than I really was, and desired leave to take the fresh air of the sea, with a page whom I was very fond of, and who had sometimes been trusted with me. I shall never forget with what unwillingness Glumdalclitch consented, nor the strict charge she gave the page to be careful of me, bursting at the same time into a flood of tears, as if she had some foreboding of what was to happen.

The boy took me out in my box, about half an hour's walk from the palace, toward the rocks on the seashore. I ordered him to set me down, and lifting one of my windows, cast many a wistful, melancholy look toward the sea. I found myself not very well, and told the page that I had a mind to take a nap in my hammock, which I hoped would do me good. I got in, and the boy shut the window close down, to keep out the cold. I soon fell asleep, and all I can conjecture is, that while I slept the page, thinking no danger could happen, went among the rocks to look for birds' eggs, having before observed him from my window searching about, and picking up one or two in the clefts.

Be that as it may, I found myself suddenly awaked with a violent pull upon the ring, which was fastened at the top of my box for the conveniency of carriage. I felt my box raised very high in the air, and then borne forward with prodigious speed. The first jolt had like to have shaken me out of my hammock

but afterward the motion was easy enough. I called out several times as loud as I could raise my voice, but all to no purpose. I looked toward my windows, and could see nothing but the clouds and sky. I heard a noise just over my head, like the clapping of wings, and then began to perceive the woful condition I was in ; that some eagle had got the ring of my box in his beak, with an intent to let it fall on a rock, like a tortoise in a shell, and then pick out my body, and devour it : for the sagacity and smell of this bird enable him to discover his quarry at a great distance.

In a little time I observed the noise and flutter of wings to increase very fast, and my box was tossed up and down, like a swinging signboard in a windy day. I heard several bangs or buffets, as I thought, given to the eagle that held the ring of my box in his beak, and then, all on a sudden, felt myself falling perpendicularly down for a minute, but with such incredible swiftness that I almost lost my breath. My fall was stopped by a terrible squash, that sounded louder to my ears than the cataract of Niagara ; after which I was quite in the dark for another minute, and then my box began to rise so high that I could see light from the tops of my windows.

I now perceived that I was fallen into the sea. My box, by the weight of my body, the goods that were in it, and the broad plates of iron fixed for strength at the four corners of the top and bottom, floated above five feet deep in water. I suppose that the eagle, which flew away with my box, was pursued by two or three others, and forced to let me drop, while he was defending himself against the rest, who hoped to share in the prey. The plates of iron fastened at the bottom of the box (for those were the strongest) preserved the balance while it fell, and hindered it from being broken on the surface of the water. Every joint of it was well grooved ; and the door did not move on hinges, but up and down like a sash, which kept my room so tight that very little water came in. I

got with much difficulty out of my hammock, having first ventured to draw back the slip-board on the roof, already mentioned, contrived on purpose to let in air, for want of which I found myself almost stifled.

How often did I then wish myself with my dear Glumdalclitch, from whom one single hour had so far divided me ! And in the midst of my own misfortunes, I could not forbear lamenting the grief she would suffer for my loss. Perhaps many travellers have not been under greater difficulties and distress than I was at this juncture, expecting every moment to see my box dashed in pieces, or, at least, upset by the first violent blast or a rising wave. A breach in one single pane of glass would have been immediate death : nor could anything have preserved the windows, but the strong lattice wires, placed on the outside, against accidents in travelling. I saw the water ooze in at several crannies, although the leaks were not considerable, and I endeavored to stop them as well as I could. I was not able to lift up the roof of my closet, which otherwise I certainly should have done, and sat on the top of it ; where I might at least preserve myself some hours longer, than by being shut up (as I may call it) in the hold. Or, if I escaped these dangers for a day or two, what could I expect but a miserable death of cold and hunger ? I was four hours under these circumstances, expecting, and indeed wishing, every moment to be my last.

I have already told the reader that there were two strong staples fixed upon that side of my box which had no window, and into which the servant, who used to carry me on horseback, would put a leathern belt, and buckle it about his waist. Being in this disconsolate state, I heard, or at least thought I heard, some kind of grating noise on that side of my box where the staples were fixed ; and soon after I began to fancy that the box was pulled or towed along in the sea ; for I now and then felt a sort of tugging, which made the waves rise near the tops of my windows, leaving me almost in the dark. This gave me some

faint hopes of relief, although I was not able to imagine how it could be brought about. I ventured to unscrew one of my chairs, which were always fastened to the floor; and having contrived to screw it down again, directly under the slipping-board that I had lately opened, I mounted on the chair, and, putting my mouth as near as I could to the hole, I called for help in a loud voice, and in all the languages I understood. I then fastened my handkerchief to a stick I usually carried, and, thrusting it up the hole waved it several times in the air, that, if any boat or ship were near, the seamen might conjecture some unhappy mortal to be shut up in this box.

I found no effect from all I could do, but plainly perceived my box to be moved along; and in the space of an hour, or better, that side of the box where the staples were, and had no windows, struck against something that was hard. I apprehended it to be a rock, and found myself tossed more than ever. I plainly heard a noise upon the cover of my room like that of a cable, and the grating of it as it passed through the ring. I then found myself hoisted up, by degrees, at least three feet higher than I was before. Whereupon I again thrust up my stick and handkerchief, calling for help till I was almost hoarse. In return to which I heard a shout repeated three times, that gave me transports of joy. I now heard a great trampling over my head, and somebody calling through the hole with a loud voice, in the English tongue, "If there be anybody below, let him speak."

I answered, I was an Englishman, drawn, by ill fortune, into the greatest calamity that ever any creature underwent, and begged, by all that was moving, to be delivered out of the dungeon I was in.

The voice replied, I was safe, for my box was fastened to their ship, and the carpenter should immediately come and saw a hole in the cover, large enough to pull me out.

I answered, that was needless, but let one of the crew put his finger into the ring, and take the box out of the sea into the ship, and so into the captain's cabin.

Some of them, upon hearing me talk so wildly, thought I was mad ; others laughed ; for indeed it never came into my head that I was now got among people of my own stature and strength. The carpenter came, and, in a few minutes, sawed a passage about four feet square, then let down a ladder, upon which I mounted, and thence was taken into the ship in a very weak condition.

The sailors were all in amazement, and asked me a thousand questions, which I had no inclination to answer. I was equally confounded at the sight of so many pigmies, for such I took them to be, after having so long accustomed mine eyes to the monstrous objects I had left. But the captain, Mr. Thomas Wilcocks, an honest, worthy Shropshire-man, observing I was ready to faint, took me into his cabin, gave me a cordial to comfort me, and made me lie down on his own bed, advising me to take a little rest, of which I had great need. Before I went to sleep I gave him to understand that I had some valuable furniture in my box, too good to be lost ; a fine hammock — a handsome bed — two chairs — a table — and a bureau. That my box was hung on all sides, or rather quilted with silk and cotton ; that, if he would let one of the crew bring my box into his cabin, I would open it there before him, and show him my goods. The captain, hearing me utter these absurdities, concluded I was raving. However (I suppose to pacify me) he promised to give order as I desired, and going on deck, sent some of his men down into my box, whence (as I afterward found) they took all my goods, and stripped off the quilting. The chairs, cabinet, and bedstead, being screwed to the floor, were much damaged by the ignorance of the seamen, who tore them up by force. Then they knocked off some of the boards for the use of the ship, and when they had got all they had a mind for, let the hull drop into the sea, which, by reason of many breaches made in the bottom and sides, sunk at once.

I slept some hours, but perpetually disturbed with dreams

of the place I had left, and the dangers I had escaped. However, upon waking, I found myself much recovered. It was now about eight o'clock at night, and the captain ordered supper immediately, thinking I had already fasted too long. He entertained me with great kindness, observing me not to look wildly, or talk inconsistently; and, when we were left alone, desired I would give him a relation of my travels, and by what accident I came to be set adrift in that monstrous wooden chest. He said that about twelve o'clock at noon, as he was looking through his glass, he spied it at a distance, and thought it was a ship. Upon coming nearer, and finding his error, he sent out his long-boat to discover what it was. His men came back in a fright, swearing that they had seen a swimming house. He laughed at their folly, and went himself in the boat, ordering his men to take a strong cable along with them. The weather being calm, he rowed round me several times, observed my windows, and the wire lattices that defended them. He discovered two staples on one side which was all of boards without any passage for light. He then commanded his men to row up to that side, and fastening a cable to one of the staples, ordered them to tow my chest, as they called it, toward the ship. When it was there, he gave directions to fasten another cable to the ring fixed in the cover, and to raise up my chest with pulleys, which all of the sailors were not able to do above two or three feet. He said they saw my stick and handkerchief thrust out of the hole, and concluded that some unhappy man must be shut up in the cavity.

I asked whether he or the crew had seen any prodigious birds in the air about the time he first discovered me? To which he answered, that discoursing with the sailors while I was asleep, one of them said he had observed three eagles flying toward the north, but remarked nothing of their being larger than the usual size; which, I suppose, must be imputed to the great height they were at; and he could not guess the reason of my question.

I then asked the captain how far he reckoned we might be from land?

He said, by the best computation he could make, we were, at least, a hundred leagues.

I assured him that he must be mistaken by almost half, for I had not left the country whence I came above two hours before I dropped into the sea. Whereupon, he began again to think that my brain was disturbed, of which he gave me a hint, and advised me to go to bed in a cabin he had provided.

I assured him I was well refreshed with his good entertainment and company, and as much in my senses as ever I was in my life.

He then grew serious, and desired to ask me freely, whether I were not troubled in mind by the consciousness of some enormous crime, for which I was punished, at the command of some prince, by exposing me in that chest; as great criminals, in other countries, have been forced to sea in a leaky vessel, without provisions; for although he should be sorry to have taken so ill a man into his ship, yet he would engage his word to set me safe on shore at the first port where we arrived. He added that his suspicions were much increased by some very absurd speeches I had delivered at first to the sailors, and afterward to himself, in relation to my closet or chest, as well as by my odd looks and behavior while I was at supper.

I begged his patience to hear me tell my story, which I faithfully did, from the last time I left England to the moment he first discovered me. And as truth always forceth its way into rational minds, so this honest, worthy gentleman, who had some tincture of learning and very good sense, was immediately convinced of my candor and veracity. But, further to confirm all I had said, I entreated him to give order that my bureau should be brought, of which I had the key in my pocket; for he had already informed me how the seamen disposed of my box. I opened it in his own presence, and showed him the

small collection of rarities I made in the country whence I had been so strangely delivered. There was the comb I had contrived out of the stumps of the king's beard, and another of the same materials, but fixed into a paring of her majesty's thumb-nail, which served for the back. There was a collection of needles and pins, from a foot to half a yard long; four wasp's stings; some combings of the queen's hair; a gold ring, which one day she made me a present of, in a most obliging manner, taking it from her little finger, and throwing it over my head like a collar. I desired the captain would please to accept this ring in return of his civilities, which he absolutely refused. Lastly, I desired him to see the breeches I had then on, which were made of a mouse's skin.

I could force nothing on him but a footman's tooth, which I observed him to examine with great curiosity, and found he had a fancy for it. He received it with abundance of thanks, more than such a trifle could deserve. It was drawn by an unskilful surgeon in a mistake, from one of Glumdalclitch's men, who was afflicted with the toothache, but it was as sound as any in his head. I got it cleaned, and put it into my cabinet. It was about a foot long and four inches in diameter.

The captain was very well satisfied with this plain relation I had given him, and said he hoped when we returned to England, I would oblige the world by putting it on paper and making it public. My answer was that I thought we were already overstocked with books of travels. However, I thanked him for his good opinion, and promised to take the matter into my thoughts. He said he wondered at one thing very much, which was, to hear me speak so loud; asking me whether the king or queen of that country were thick of hearing?

I told him it was what I had been used to for above two years past, and that I marvelled as much at the voices of him and his men, who seemed to me only to whisper, and yet I

could hear them well enough. But when I spoke in that country it was like a man talking in the street to another looking out from the top of a steeple, unless when I was placed on a table, or held in any person's hand. I told him I had likewise observed another thing, that, when I first got into the ship, and the sailors stood all about me, I thought they were the most contemptible little creatures I had ever beheld. For, indeed, while I was in that prince's country, I could never endure to look in a glass after mine eyes had been accustomed to such prodigious objects, because the comparison gave me so despicable a conceit of myself.

The captain said that while we were at supper he observed me to look at everything with a sort of wonder, and that I often seemed hardly able to contain my laughter, which he knew not well how to take, but imputed it to some disorder in my brain.

I answered, it was very true: and I wondered how I could forbear when I saw his dishes of the size of a silver threepence, a leg of pork hardly a mouthful, a cup not so big as a nutshell; and so I went on, describing the rest of his household stuff and provisions after the same manner. For, although the queen had ordered a little equipage of all things necessary for me, while I was in her service, yet my ideas were wholly taken up with what I saw on every side of me, and I winked at my own littleness as people do at their own faults. The captain understood my raillery very well, and merrily protested he would have gladly given a hundred pounds to have seen my box in the eagle's bill, and afterward in its fall from so great a height into the sea; which would certainly have been a most astonishing object worthy to have the description of it transmitted to future ages.

The captain, having been at Tonquin, was, on his return to England, driven northeastward to the latitude of 44 degrees, and longitude of 143.° But, meeting a trade-wind two days

after I came on board him, we sailed southward a long time, and, coasting New Holland,^o kept our course southwest, till we doubled the Cape of Good Hope. The captain called in at one or two ports, and sent in his long-boat for provisions and fresh water ; but I never went out of the ship till we came into the Downs,^o which was on the third day of June, 1706, about nine months after my escape. I offered to leave my goods in security for payment of my freight ; but the captain protested he would not receive one farthing. We took kind leave of each other, and I made him promise he would come to see me at my house in Redriff. I hired a horse and guide for five shillings, which I borrowed of the captain.

As I was on the road, observing the littleness of the houses, the trees, the cattle, and the people, I began to think myself in Lilliput. I was afraid of trampling on every traveller I met, and often called aloud to have them stand out of the way, so that I had like to have gotten one or two broken heads for my impertinence.

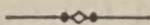
When I came to my own house, for which I was forced to inquire, one of the servants opening the door, I bent down to go in (like a goose under a gate) for fear of striking my head. My wife ran out to embrace me, but I stooped lower than her knees, thinking she could otherwise never be able to reach my mouth. My daughter kneeled to ask my blessing, but I could not see her till she arose, having been so long used to stand with my head and eyes erect to above sixty feet ; and then I went to take her up with one hand by the waist. I looked down upon the servants, and one or two friends who were in the house, as if they had been pigmies and I a giant. I told my wife she had been too thrifty, for I found she had starved herself and her daughter to nothing. In short, I behaved myself so unaccountably that they were all of the captain's opinion when he first saw me, and concluded I had lost my wits. This I mention as an instance of the great power of habit and prejudice.

In a little time I and my family and friends came to a right understanding ; but my wife protested I should never go to sea any more ; although my evil destiny so ordered that she had not power to hinder me, as the reader may know hereafter. In the meantime I here conclude the second part of my unfortunate voyages.

PART III

A VOYAGE TO LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI,
LUGGNAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIBB, AND JAPAN

A VOYAGE TO LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIBB, AND JAPAN



CHAPTER I

The Author sets out on his third Voyage — Is taken by Pirates —
The malice of a Dutchman — His arrival at an Island — He is
received into Laputa.

I HAD not been at home above ten days when Captain William Robinson, a Cornish man, commander of the *Hope-well*, a stout ship of three hundred tons, came to my house. I had formerly been surgeon of another ship, where he was master and a fourth-part owner, in a voyage to the Levant. He had always treated me more like a brother than an inferior officer; and, hearing of my arrival, made me a visit, as I apprehended, only out of friendship, for nothing passed more than what is usual after long absences. But, repeating his visits often, expressing his joy to find me in good health, adding, that he intended a voyage to the East Indies in two months; at last he invited me to be surgeon of the ship; saying that my salary should be double the usual pay; and that having experienced my knowledge in sea affairs to be at least equal to his, he would enter into any engagement to follow my advice as much as if I had share in the command.

He said so many other obliging things, and I knew him to be so honest a man, that I could not reject his proposal ; the thirst I had of seeing the world, notwithstanding my past misfortunes, continuing as violent as ever. The only difficulty that remained was to persuade my wife, whose consent, however, I at last obtained, by the prospect of advantage to our children.

We set out the 5th day of August, 1706, and arrived at Madras the 11th of April, 1707. We stayed there three weeks to refresh our crew, many of whom were sick. Thence we went to Tonquin, where the captain resolved to continue some time, because many of the goods he intended to buy were not ready. Therefore, in hopes to defray some of the charges he must be at, he bought a sloop, loaded it with several sorts of goods, wherewith the Tonquinese usually trade to the neighboring islands, and putting fourteen men on board, he appointed me master of the sloop, and gave me power to traffic while he transacted his affairs at Tonquin.

We had not sailed above three days, when a great storm arising, we were driven five days to the north-northeast, and then to the east ; after which we had fair weather, but still with a pretty strong gale from the west. Upon the tenth day we were chased by two pirate ships which soon overtook us ; for my sloop was so deep laden that she sailed very slowly, neither were we in a condition to defend ourselves.

We were boarded about the same time by both the pirate captains, who entered furiously at the head of their men ; but, finding us all prostrate upon our faces (for so I gave order) they pinioned us with strong ropes, and, setting a guard upon us, went to search the sloop.

I observed among them a Dutchman, who seemed to be of some authority, though he was not commander of either ship. He knew us by our countenances to be Englishmen, and, jabbering to us in his own language, swore we should be tied back to

back, and thrown into the sea. I spoke Dutch tolerably well. I told him who we were, and begged him, in consideration of our being Christians and Protestants, of neighboring countries in strict alliance, that he would urge the captains to take some pity on us. This inflamed his rage. He repeated his threatenings, and, turning to his companions, spoke with great vehemence in the Japanese language, as I suppose, often using the word *Christianos*.

The largest of the two pirate ships was commanded by a Japanese captain, who spoke a little Dutch. He came up to me, and, after several questions, which I answered in great humility, he said we should not die. I made the captain a very low bow, and then, turning to the Dutchman, said I was sorry to find more mercy in a heathen than in a brother Christian. But I had soon reason to repent those foolish words; for that malicious reprobate, having endeavored in vain to persuade both the captains that I might be thrown into the sea (which they would not yield to, after the promise made me that I should not die) however, prevailed so far as to have a punishment inflicted on me, worse, in all human appearance, than death itself. My men were sent by an equal division into both the pirate ships and my sloop new manned. As to myself, it was determined that I should be set adrift in a small canoe, with paddles and a sail, and four day's provisions; which last the Japanese captain was so kind as to double out of his own stores. I got down into the canoe, while the Dutchman, standing upon the deck, loaded me with all the curses and injurious terms his language could afford.

About an hour before we saw the pirates I had taken an observation, and found we were in latitude 46 N. and longitude 183.° When I was at some distance from the pirates I discovered by my pocket-glass several islands to the southeast. I set up my sail, the wind being fair, with a design to reach the nearest of those islands, which I made a shift to do in about

three hours. It was all rocky. However, I got many birds' eggs ; and striking fire, I kindled some heath and dry seaweed, by which I roasted my eggs. I ate no other supper, being resolved to spare my provisions as much as I could. I passed the night under the shelter of a rock, strewing some heath under me, and slept pretty well.

The next day I sailed to another island, and thence to a third and fourth, sometimes using my sail, and sometimes my paddles. But on the fifth day I arrived at the last island in my sight, which lay southeast of the former.

This island was at a greater distance than I expected, and I did not reach it in less than five hours. I nearly encompassed it before I could find a convenient place to land ; which was a small creek, about three times the wideness of my canoe. I found the island to be all rocks, with only a little intermingling of tufts of grass and sweet-smelling herbs. I took out my small provisions, and, after having refreshed myself, I secured the remainder in a cave, whereof there were great numbers. I gathered plenty of eggs upon the rocks, and got a quantity of dry seaweed and parched grass, which I designed to kindle the next day, and roast my eggs as well as I could ; for I had about me my flint, steel, tinder, and burning-glass. I lay all night in the cave where I had lodged my provisions. My bed was the same dry grass and seaweed which I intended for fuel. I slept very little, for the disquiets of my mind prevailed over my weariness, and kept me awake. I considered how impossible it was to preserve my life in so desolate a place, and how miserable my end must be. Yet I found myself so listless and desponding that I had not the heart to rise ; and, before I could get spirits enough to creep out of my cave, the day was far advanced.

I walked awhile among the rocks. The sky was perfectly clear, and the sun so hot that I was forced to turn my face from it ; when, all on a sudden, it became obscure, as I thought,

in a manner very different from what happens by the interposition of a cloud. I turned back, and perceived a vast opaque body between me and the sun, moving forward toward the island. It seemed to be about two miles high, and hid the sun six or seven minutes ; but I did not observe the air to be much colder, or the sky more darkened, than if I had stood under the shade of a mountain. As it approached nearer over the place where I was, it appeared to be a firm substance, the bottom flat, smooth, and shining very bright, from the reflection of the sea below. I stood upon a height about two hundred yards from the shore, and saw this vast body descending almost to a parallel with me, at less than an English mile distance. I took out my pocket perspective, and could plainly discover numbers of people moving up and down the sides of it, which appeared to be sloping : but what those people were doing I was not able to distinguish.

The natural love of life gave me some inward motions of joy, and I was ready to entertain a hope that this adventure might, some way or other, help to deliver me from the desolate place and condition I was in. But at the same time the reader can hardly conceive my astonishment to behold an island in the air, inhabited by men who were able (as it would seem) to raise or sink, or put it into a progressive motion, as they pleased. But not being at that time in a disposition to philosophize upon this phenomenon, I rather chose to observe what course the island would take, because it seemed for a while to stand still. Yet, soon after, it advanced nearer, and I could see the sides of it encompassed with several gradations of galleries, and there were stairs, at certain intervals, to descend from one gallery to another. In the lowest gallery I beheld some people fishing with long angling rods, and others looking on. I waved my hat and my handkerchief toward the island ; and upon its nearer approach I called and shouted with the utmost strength of my voice ; and then looking circumspectly, I beheld a crowd

gather to that side which was most in my view. I found by their pointing toward me, and to each other, that they plainly discovered me, although they made no return to my shouting. But I could see four or five men running in great haste up the stairs, to the top of the island, who then disappeared. I conjectured that these were sent for orders, to some person in authority.

The number of people increased, and in less than an hour the island was moved in such a manner that the lowest gallery appeared in a parallel of less than a hundred yards distance from the height where I stood. I then put myself into the most supplicating postures, and spoke in the humblest accent, but received no answer. Those who stood nearest over against me seemed to be persons of distinction, as I supposed by their habit. They conferred earnestly with each other, looking often upon me. At length one of them called out in a clear, polite, smooth dialect, not unlike in sound to the Italian ; and, therefore, I returned an answer in that language, hoping at least that the cadence might be more agreeable to his ears. Although neither of us understood the other, yet my meaning was easily known, for the people saw the distress I was in.

They made signs for me to come down from the rock, and go toward the shore, which I accordingly did ; and the flying island being adjusted to a convenient height, the verge directly over me, a chain was let down from the lowest gallery, with a seat fastened to the bottom, to which I fixed myself, and was drawn up by pulleys.

CHAPTER II

The Humors and Dispositions of the Laputians described — An account of their Learning — Of the King and his Court — The Author's reception there — The Inhabitants subject to fears and disquietudes — A Description of the Flying Island — The King's method of suppressing Insurrections.

AT my alighting I was surrounded by a crowd of people, and I never had seen a race of mortals so singular in their shapes, habits, and countenances. Their heads were all inclined either to the right or the left. One of their eyes turned inward, and the other directly up to the zenith. Their outward garments were adorned with the figures of suns, moons, and stars ; interwoven with those of fiddles, flutes, harps, trumpets, guitars, harpsichords,^o and with many more instruments of music unknown to us in Europe. I observed here and there many in the habit of servants, with a blown bladder fastened like a flail to the end of a short stick, which they carried in their hands. In each bladder was a small quantity of dried peas, or little pebbles, as I was afterward informed. With these bladders they now and then flapped the mouths and ears of those who stood near them, of which practice I could not then conceive the meaning. It seems the minds of these people are so taken up with intense speculations that they neither can speak, nor attend to the discourses of others, without being roused by some external action upon the organs of speech and hearing ; for which reason those persons who are able to afford it always keep a flapper in their family as one of their domestics ; nor ever walk abroad, or make visits, without him. And the

business of this officer is, when two or three or more persons are in company, gently to strike with his bladder the mouth of him who is to speak, and the right ear of him or them to whom the speaker addresseth himself. This flapper is likewise employed diligently to attend his master in his walks, and upon occasion to give him a soft flap on his eyes; because he is always so wrapped up in cogitation that he is in manifest danger of falling down every precipice, and bouncing his head against every post; and in the streets of jostling others, or being jostled himself, into the gutter.

These people conducted me up the stairs to the top of the island, and thence to the royal palace. While we were ascending they forgot several times what they were about, and left me to myself, till their memories were again roused by their flappers, for they appeared altogether unmoved by the sight of my foreign habit and countenance, and by the shouts of the vulgar, whose thoughts and minds were more disengaged.

At last we entered the palace, and proceeded into the chamber of presence, where I saw the king seated on his throne, attended on each side by persons of quality. Before the throne was a large table filled with globes and spheres and mathematical instruments of all kinds. His majesty took not the least notice of us, although our entrance was with sufficient noise. But he was then deep in a problem; and we attended at least an hour before he could solve it. There stood by him, on each side, a young page with a flap in his hands, and when the pages saw he was at leisure, one of them gently struck his mouth, and the other his right ear; at which he started like one awaked on the sudden, and looking toward me and the company I was in, recollected the occasion of our coming, whereof he had been informed before. He spoke some words, whereupon immediately a young man with a flap came up to my side and flapped me gently on the right ear; but I made signs, as well as I could, that I had no occasion for such an instru-

ment, which, as I afterward found, gave his majesty and the whole court a very mean opinion of my understanding.

The king, as far as I could conjecture, asked me several questions, and I addressed myself to him in all the languages I had. When it was found that I could neither understand nor be understood, I was conducted by the king's order to an apartment in his palace, where two servants were appointed to attend me. My dinner was brought, and four persons of quality, whom I remembered to have seen very near the king's person, did me the honor to dine with me. We had two courses of three dishes each. In the first course there was a shoulder of mutton cut into an equilateral triangle, a piece of beef into a rhomboid, and a pudding into a cycloid. The second course was two ducks trussed up into the form of fiddles; sausages and puddings, resembling flutes and hautboys, and a breast of veal in the shape of a harp. The servants cut our bread into cones, cylinders, parallelograms, and several other mathematical figures.

While we were at dinner I made bold to ask the names of several things in their language, and those noble persons, by the assistance of their flappers, delighted to give me answers, hoping I could be brought to converse with them. I was soon able to call for bread and drink, or whatever else I wanted.

After dinner my company withdrew, and a person was sent to me by the king's order, attended by a flapper. He brought with him pen, ink, and paper, and three or four books, giving me to understand by signs that he was sent to teach me the language. We sat together four hours, in which time I wrote down a great number of words in columns, with the translations over against them; I likewise made a shift to learn several short sentences. For my tutor would order one of my servants to fetch something, or turn about, to make a bow, to sit, or stand, or walk, and the like. Then I took down the sentence in writing. He showed me also, in one of his books, the figures of the sun, moon, and stars, the zodiac, the tropic and polar circles,

together with the denominations of many figures of planes and solids. He gave me names and descriptions of all the musical instruments, and the general terms of art in playing on each of them. After he had left me I placed all my words, with their interpretations, in alphabetical order. And thus, in a few days, by the help of a very faithful memory, I got some insight into their language.

Those to whom the king had intrusted me, observing how ill I was clad, ordered a tailor to come next morning, and take my measure for a suit of clothes. This operator first took my altitude by a quadrant, and then, with rule and compasses, described the dimensions and outlines of my whole body, all which he entered upon paper; and, in six days, brought my clothes, very ill made, and quite out of shape, by happening to mistake a figure in the calculation. But my comfort was, that such accidents were very frequent, and little regarded.

During my confinement, for want of clothes, and by an indisposition that held me some days longer, I much enlarged my dictionary; and when I went next to court, was able to understand many things the king spoke, and to return him some kind of answers. His majesty had given orders that the island or Laputa as they called it, should move northeast to the vertical point over Lagado, the metropolis of the whole kingdom below, upon the firm earth. It was about ninety leagues distant, and our voyage lasted four days and a half. I was not in the least sensible of the progressive motion made in the air by the island. On the second morning, about eleven o'clock, the king himself in person, attended by his nobility, courtiers, and officers, having prepared all their musical instruments, played on them for three hours without intermission, so that I was quite stunned with the noise.

In our journey toward Lagado, the capital city, his majesty ordered that the island should stop over certain towns and villages, whence he might receive the petitions of his subjects.

And, to this purpose, several packthreads were let down, with small weights at the bottom. On these packthreads the people strung their petitions, which mounted up directly, like the scraps of paper fastened by schoolboys at the end of the string that holds their kite. Sometimes we received wine and victuals from below, which were drawn up by pulleys.

The knowledge I had in mathematics gave me great assistance in acquiring their phraseology, which depended much upon that science and music; and in the latter I was not unskilled. Their ideas are perpetually conversant in lines and figures. I observed, in the king's kitchen, all sorts of mathematical and musical instruments, after the figures of which they cut up the joints that were served to his majesty's table.

Their houses are very ill built; and this defect ariseth from the instructions they give being too refined for the intellects of their workmen, which occasions perpetual mistakes. And although they are dexterous enough upon a piece of paper, in the management of the rule, the pencil, and the compasses, yet, in the common actions and behavior of life, I have not seen a more clumsy, awkward, and unhandy people, nor so slow and perplexed in their conceptions upon all other subjects, except those of mathematics and music. They are very bad reasoners, and vehemently given to opposition. Imagination, fancy, and invention, they are wholly strangers to, nor have they any words in their language by which those ideas can be expressed; the whole compass of their thoughts and mind being shut up within the two fore-mentioned sciences.

Most of them, and especially those who deal in the astronomical part, have great faith in judicial astrology,^o although they are ashamed to own it publicly.

These people are under continual disquietudes, never enjoying a minute's peace of mind from their apprehensions of changes they dread in the celestial bodies. For instance, that the earth, by the continual approach of the sun toward it,

must, in course of time, be swallowed up. That the face of the sun will, by degrees, be encrusted with its own effluvia, and give no more light to the world. That the earth very narrowly escaped a brush from the tail of the last comet, which would have infallibly reduced it to ashes ; and that the next, which they have calculated for thirty-one years hence, will probably destroy us. For if it should approach within a certain degree of the sun, it will acquire a degree of heat ten thousand times more intense than that of red-hot glowing iron, and carry a blazing tail, ten hundred thousand and fourteen miles long ; through which, if the earth should pass at the distance of one hundred thousand miles from the nucleus, or main body of the comet, it must in its passage be set on fire, and reduced to ashes. That the sun, daily spending its rays without any nutriment to supply them, will at last be wholly consumed and annihilated ; which must be attended with the destruction of this earth, and of all the planets that receive their light from it.

They are so perpetually alarmed with the apprehensions of these and the like impending dangers, that they can neither sleep quietly in their beds, nor have any relish for the common pleasures or amusements of life. When they meet an acquaintance in the morning the first question is about the sun's health, how he looked at his setting and rising, and what hopes they have to avoid the stroke of the approaching comet.^o This conversation they are apt to run into with the same temper that boys discover in delighting to hear terrible stories of spirits and hobgoblins, which they greedily listen to, and dare not go to bed for fear.

In about a month's time I had made a tolerable proficiency in their language, and was able to answer most of the king's questions, when I had the honor to attend him. His majesty showed not the least curiosity to inquire into the laws, government, history, religion, or manners of the countries where I had been ; but confined his questions to the state of mathe-

matics, and received the account I gave him with great contempt and indifference, though often roused by his flapper on each side.

I desired leave of this prince to see the curiosities of the island, which he was graciously pleased to grant, and ordered my tutor to attend me. I chiefly wanted to know to what cause it owed its several motions.

The Floating Island is exactly circular, its diameter about four miles and a half, and consequently contains ten thousand acres. It is three hundred yards thick. The bottom is one even regular plate of adamant,^o above which lie various layers of rock; and over all is a coat of rich mould, ten or twelve feet deep. The declivity of the upper surface, from the circumference to the centre, is the natural cause why all the dews and rains, which fall upon the island, are conveyed in small rivulets toward the middle, where they are emptied into four large basins, each of about half a mile in circuit, and two hundred yards distant from the centre. From these basins the water is continually exhaled by the sun in the daytime, which effectually prevents their overflowing.

At the centre of the island there is a chasm, about fifty yards in diameter, whence the astronomers descend into a large dome, which is called the Astronomer's Cave, situated at the depth of a hundred yards beneath the upper surface of the adamant. In this cave are twenty lamps continually burning, which from the reflection of the adamant cast a strong light into every part. The place is stored with a great variety of sextants, telescopes, and other astronomical instruments. But the greatest curiosity, upon which the fate of the island depends, is a loadstone of prodigious size, in shape resembling a weaver's shuttle. It is in length six yards, and in the thickest part at least three yards in circumference. This magnet is sustained by a very strong axle of adamant passing through its middle, upon which it is poised so exactly that the weakest hand can turn it.

By means of this loadstone the island is made to rise and fall, and move from one place to another. For the stone is endued at one of its ends with an attractive power, and at the other with a repulsive. Upon placing the magnet erect, with its attracting end toward the earth, the island descends; but when the repelling extremity points downward, the island mounts directly upward. When the position of the stone is oblique, the motion of the island is so too; for in this magnet the forces always act in lines parallel to its direction.

But it must be observed that this island cannot move beyond the extent of the dominions below, nor can it rise above the height of four miles. For which the astronomers assign the following reason: that the magnetic virtue does not extend beyond the distance of four miles, and that the mineral, which acts upon the stone in the bowels of the earth, and in the sea about six leagues distant from the shore, is not diffused through the whole globe, but terminates with the limits of the king's dominions; and it was easy, from the great advantage of such a superior situation, for a prince to bring under his obedience whatever country lay within the attraction of that magnet.

When the stone is put parallel to the plane of the horizon, the island standeth still; for, in that case, the extremities of it being at equal distance from the earth, act with equal force, the one in drawing downward, the other in pulling upward, and consequently no motion can ensue.

This loadstone is under the care of certain astronomers, who, from time to time, give it such positions as the monarch directs. They spend the greatest part of their lives in observing the celestial bodies, which they do by the assistance of glasses, far excelling ours in goodness. For although their largest telescopes do not exceed three feet in length, they magnify much more than those of a hundred with us, and show the stars with greater clearness. This advantage hath enabled them to extend their discoveries much further than our astronomers in Europe.

The king would be the most absolute prince in the universe, if he could but prevail on a ministry to join with him; but those having their estates below on the continent, would never consent to the enslaving of their country.

If any town should engage in rebellion, fall into violent factions, or refuse to pay the usual tribute, the king hath two methods of reducing it to obedience. The mildest course is by keeping the island hovering over such a town, and the lands about it, whereby he can deprive them of the benefit of the sun and the rain, and consequently afflict the inhabitants with dearth and diseases. And if the crime deserve it, they are at the same time pelted from above with great stones, against which they have no defence but by creeping into cellars or caves, while the roofs of their houses are beaten to pieces. But if they still continue obstinate, or offer to raise insurrections, he proceeds to the last remedy, by letting the island drop directly upon their heads, which makes a universal destruction both of houses and men. However, this is an extremity to which the prince is seldom driven, and the kings of this country have been always averse from executing so terrible an action. For, if the town intended to be destroyed should have in it any tall rocks, or if it abound in high spires, or pillars of stone, these might endanger the bottom of the island, which, although it consists, as I have said, of adamant, might happen to crack. Of this the people are well apprised, and understand how far to carry their obstinacy, where their liberty or property are concerned. And the king, when he is highest provoked and most determined to press a city to rubbish, orders the island to descend with great gentleness, out of a pretence of tenderness to his people, but indeed for fear of breaking the adamantine bottom, in which case, it is the opinion of all their philosophers, that the loadstone could no longer hold it up, and the whole mass would fall to the ground.

CHAPTER III

The Author leaves Laputa, is conveyed to Balnibarbi, arrives at the Metropolis — A Description of the Metropolis and the Country adjoining — The Author hospitably received by a great Lord — His conversation with that Lord.

ALTHOUGH I cannot say that I was ill treated in this island, yet I must confess I thought myself too much neglected, and, after having seen all the curiosities of the island, I was very desirous to leave it, being heartily weary of those people. They were indeed excellent in two sciences for which I have great esteem; but at the same time so abstracted and involved in speculation that I never met with such disagreeable companions. I conversed chiefly with women, tradesmen, flappers, and court-pages, during two months of my abode here; by which at last I rendered myself extremely contemptible; yet these were usually the only people from whom I could ever receive a reasonable answer.

There was however a great lord at court, nearly related to the king, and for that reason used with respect, though universally reckoned the most ignorant and stupid person among them. He had performed many eminent services for the crown, had great natural and acquired parts, adorned with integrity and honor; but so ill an ear for music that his detractors reported that he had been often known to beat time in the wrong place; neither could his tutors, without extreme difficulty, teach him to demonstrate the most easy proposition in the mathematics. He was pleased to show me many marks of favor, often did me

the honor of a visit, desired to be informed in the affairs of Europe, the laws and customs, the manners and learning of the several countries where I had travelled. He listened to me with great attention, and made very wise observations on all I spoke. He had two flappers attending him, but never made use of them, except at court, and in visits of ceremony, and would always command them to withdraw when we were alone together.

I entreated this illustrious person to intercedè in my behalf with his majesty for leave to depart, which he accordingly did.

On the 16th day of February I took leave of his majesty and the court. The king made me a present to the value of about two hundred pounds English, and my protector, his kinsman, as much more, together with a letter of recommendation to a friend of his in Lagado, the metropolis. The island being then hovering over a mountain about two miles from it, I was let down from the lowest gallery in the same manner as I had been taken up.

The continent, as far as it is subject to the monarch of Flying Island, passes under the general name of *Balnibarbi*; and the metropolis, as I said before, is called *Lagado*. I felt some little satisfaction in finding myself on firm ground. I walked to the city without any concern, being clad like one of the natives, and sufficiently instructed to converse with them. I soon found out the person's house to whom I was recommended, presented my letter from his friend, the grandee in the island, and was received with much kindness. This great lord, whose name was Munodi, ordered me an apartment in his own house, where I continued during my stay, and was entertained in a most hospitable manner.

The next morning after my arrival he took me in his chariot to see the town, which is about half the bigness of London; but the houses were very strangely built, and most of them out of repair. The people in the streets walked fast, looked wild, their eyes fixed, and were generally in rags. We

passed through one of the town gates, and went about three miles into the country, where I saw many laborers working with several sorts of tools in the ground, but was not able to conjecture what they were about ; neither did I observe any expectation either of corn or grass, although the soil appeared to be excellent. I could not forbear surprise at these odd appearances, both in town and country ; and I made bold to desire my conductor that he would be pleased to explain to me what could be meant by so many busy heads, hands and faces, both in the streets and the fields, because I did not discover any good effects they produced ; but, on the contrary, I never knew a soil so unhappily cultivated, houses so ill contrived and so ruinous, or a people whose countenances and habit expressed so much misery and want.

This lord Munodi was a person of the first rank, and had been some years governor of Lagado ; but, by a cabal of ministers, was discharged. When we returned to his palace he asked me how I liked the building, what absurdities I observed, and what quarrel I had with the dress and looks of his domestics ? This he might safely do ; because everything about him was magnificent, regular and polite. I answered that his excellency's prudence, quality, and fortune, had exempted him from those defects which folly and beggary had produced in others. He said if I would go with him to his country house, about twenty miles distant, where his estate lay, there would be more leisure for this kind of conversation. I told his excellency that I was entirely at his disposal ; and accordingly we set out next morning.

During our journey, he made me observe the several methods used by farmers in managing their lands ; which to me were wholly unaccountable ; for, except in some very few places, I could not discover one ear of corn or blade of grass. But in three hours' travelling, the scene was wholly altered ; we came into a most beautiful country ; farmers' houses, at small dis-

tances, neatly built ; the fields enclosed, containing vineyards, corn-grounds, and meadows. Neither do I remember to have seen a more delightful prospect. His excellency observed my countenance to clear up ; he told me, with a sigh, that there his estate began, and would continue the same till we should come to his house. That his countrymen ridiculed and despised him for managing his affairs no better, and for setting so ill an example to the kingdom ; which, however, was followed by very few, such as were old and wilful, and weak, like himself.

We came at length to the house, which was indeed a noble structure, built according to the best rules of ancient architecture. The fountains, gardens, walks, avenues, and groves, were all disposed with exact judgment and taste. I gave due praises to everything I saw, whereof his excellency took not the least notice till after supper ; when, there being no third companion, he told me, with a very melancholy air, that he doubted he must throw down his houses in town and country, to rebuild them after the present mode ; destroy all his plantations, and cast others into such a form as modern usage required, and give the same directions to all his tenants, unless he would submit to incur the censure of pride, singularity, affectation, ignorance, and caprice. That the amazement I appeared to be in would cease or diminish, when he had informed me of some particulars which, probably, I never heard of at court ; the people there being too much taken up in their own speculations to have regard to what passed here below.

The sum of his discourse was to this effect : That about forty years ago certain persons went up to Laputa, either upon business or diversion, and after five months, came back with a very little smattering in mathematics, but full of volatile spirits acquired in that airy region. That these persons, upon their return, began to dislike the management of everything below, and fell into schemes of putting all arts, sciences, and mechanics,

upon a new footing. To this end they procured a royal patent for erecting an academy of projectors in Lagado; and the humor prevailed so strongly among the people, that there is not a town of any consequence in the kingdom without such an academy.

In these colleges the professors contrive new rules and methods of agriculture and building, and new instruments and tools for all trades and manufactures; whereby they undertake that one man shall do the work of ten; a palace may be built in a week of materials so durable as to last forever without repairing; all the fruits of the earth shall come to maturity at whatever season we think fit to choose, and increase a hundred-fold more than they do at present; with innumerable other happy proposals. The only inconvenience is, that none of these projects are yet brought to perfection: and, in the meantime, the whole country lies miserably waste, the houses in ruins, and the people without food or clothes. As for himself, being not of an enterprising spirit, he was content to go on in the old forms, to live in the houses his ancestors had built, and act as they did. That some few other persons of quality had done the same, but were looked on with an eye of contempt and ill-will, as enemies to art, ignorant, and preferring their own ease and sloth before the general improvement of their country.

His lordship added, that he would not, by any further particulars, prevent the pleasure I should certainly take in viewing the grand academy, whither he was resolved I should go. He only desired me to observe a ruined building upon the side of a mountain about three miles distant, of which he gave me this account: That he had a very convenient mill within half a mile of his house, turned by a current from a large river, and sufficient for his own family, as well as a great number of his tenants. That about seven years ago a club of those projectors came to him with proposals to destroy this mill, and

build another on the side of that mountain, where must be cut a repository for water. The water was to be conveyed up by pipes and engines to supply the mill ; and thence descending a declivity, it would turn the mill with half the current of a river whose course is more upon a level. He said that being pressed by many of his friends, he complied with the proposal ; and after employing a hundred men for two years the work miscarried, the projecters went off, laying the blame entirely upon him, railing at him ever since, and putting others upon the same experiment, with equal assurance of success, as well as equal disappointment.

In a few days we came back to town ; and his excellency, considering the bad character he had in the academy, would not go with me himself, but recommended me to a friend of his, to bear me company thither. My lord was pleased to represent me as a great admirer of projects, and a person of much curiosity.

CHAPTER IV

The Author permitted to see the Grand Academy of Lagado — The Academy described — The Arts wherein the Professors employ themselves.

THE Laputian academy is not a single building, but a continuation of several houses on both sides of a street.

I was received very kindly by the warden, and went for many days to the academy. Every room hath in it one or more projectors ; and, I believe, I could not have visited fewer than five hundred rooms.

The first man I saw was of a meagre aspect, with sooty hands and face, his hair and beard long, ragged, and singed in several places. His clothes, shirt, and skin were all of the same color. He had been eight years upon a project for extracting sunbeams out of cucumbers, which were to be put into vials hermetically sealed, and let out to warm the air in raw, inclement summers. He told me he did not doubt, in eight years more, he should be able to supply the governor's gardens with sunshine at a reasonable rate ; but he complained that his money was low, and entreated me to give him something as an encouragement to ingenuity, especially since this had been a very dear season for cucumbers.

I saw another at work to calcine ice into gunpowder, who likewise showed me a treatise he had written concerning the malleability of fire, which he intended to publish.

There was a most ingenious architect, who had contrived a new method for building houses, by beginning at the roof, and

working downward to the foundation ; which he justified to me by the like practice of those two prudent insects, the bee and the spider.

There was a man born blind, who had several apprentices in his own condition. Their employment was to mix colors for painters, which their master taught them to distinguish by feeling and smelling. It was indeed my misfortune to find them at that time not very perfect in their lessons, and the professor himself happened to be generally mistaken. This artist is much encouraged and esteemed by the whole fraternity.

In another apartment I was highly pleased with a projector who had found a device for ploughing the ground with hogs, to save the charges of ploughs, cattle, and labor. The method is this : In an acre of ground you bury, six inches apart, and eight deep, a quantity of acorns, dates, chestnuts, and other nuts or vegetables, whereof those animals are fondest ; then you drive six hundred or more of them into the field, where in a few days, they will root up the whole ground in search of their food, and make it fit for sowing. It is true, upon experiment, they found the charge and trouble very great, and they had little or no crop. However, it is not doubted that this invention may be capable of great improvement.

I went into another room where the walls and ceiling were all hung round with cobwebs, except a narrow passage for the projector to go in and out. At my entrance he called aloud to me not to disturb his webs. He lamented the fatal mistake the world had been so long in, of using silk-worms, while we had such plenty of domestic insects, who infinitely excelled the former, because they understood how to weave as well as spin. And he proposed further that, by employing spiders, the charge of dyeing silk should be wholly saved ; whereof I was fully convinced when he showed me a vast number of flies, most beautifully colored, wherewith he fed his spiders, assuring us that the webs would take a tincture from them ; and as he

had them of all hues, he hoped to fit everybody's fancy, as soon as he could find proper food for the flies, of certain gums, oils, and other glutinous matter, to give strength and consistence to the threads.°

I visited many other apartments, but shall not trouble my reader with all the curiosities I observed.

I had hitherto seen only one side of the academy, the other being appropriated to the advancers of speculative learning, of whom I shall say something, when I have mentioned one illustrious person more, who is called among them, "The universal artist." He told us he had been thirty years employing his thoughts for the improvement of human life. He had two large rooms full of wonderful curiosities, and fifty men at work. Some were condensing air into a dry, tangible substance; others softening marble for pillows and pin-cushions; others petrifying the hoofs of a living horse, to preserve them from foundering.° The artist himself was at that time busy upon two great designs; the first, to sow land with chaff, wherein he affirmed the true germinal virtue to be contained, as he demonstrated by several experiments, which I was not skilful enough to comprehend. The other was by a certain composition of gums, minerals, and vegetables, outwardly applied, to prevent the growth of wool upon two young lambs; and he hoped, in a reasonable time, to propagate the breed of naked sheep all over the kingdom.

We crossed a walk to the other part of the academy, where, as I have already said, the projectors in speculative learning resided.

The first professor I saw was in a very large room, with forty pupils about him. After salutation, observing me to look earnestly upon a frame, which took up the greatest part of both the length and breadth of the room, he said, he was employed in a project for improving speculative knowledge, by mechanical operations. The world would soon be sensible of its usefulness;

and he flattered himself, that a more noble, exalted thought never sprang in any other man's head. Every one knew how laborious the usual method is of attaining to arts and sciences; whereas, by his contrivance, the most ignorant person might write books in philosophy, poetry, politics, law, mathematics, and theology, without the least assistance from genius or study. He then led me to the frame, about the sides whereof all his pupils stood in ranks. It was twenty feet square, placed in the middle of the room. The surface was composed of bits of wood, all linked together by slender wires. These bits of wood were covered, with paper pasted on them; and on these papers were written all the words of their language, in their several moods, tenses, and declensions, but without any order. The professor then desired me to observe, for he was going to set his engine at work. The pupils, at his command, took each of them hold of an iron handle, whereof there were forty fixed round the edges of the frame, and giving them a sudden turn, the whole disposition of the words was entirely changed. He then commanded thirty-six of the lads to read the several lines softly, as they appeared upon the frame; and where they found three or four words together that might make part of a sentence, they dictated to the four remaining boys, who were scribes. This work was repeated three or four times, and, at every turn, the engine was so contrived that the words shifted into new places.

Six hours a day the young students were employed in this labor; and the professor showed me several volumes, already collected, of broken sentences, which he intended to piece together, and out of those rich materials, to give the world a complete body of all arts and sciences; which, however, might be still improved, and much expedited, if the public would raise a fund for making and employing five hundred such frames in Lagado, and oblige the managers to contribute in common their several collections.

He assured me that this invention had employed all his thoughts from his youth ; that he had emptied the whole vocabulary into his frame, and made the strictest computation of the general proportion there is in books between the numbers of particles, nouns, and verbs, and other parts of speech.

I made my humblest acknowledgment to this illustrious person for his great communicativeness ; and promised, if ever I had the good fortune to return to my native country, that I would do him justice, as the sole inventor of this wonderful machine.

We next went to the school of language, where three professors sat in consultation upon improving that of their own country.

The first project was to shorten discourse, by cutting polysyllables into one, and leaving out verbs and participles, because, in reality, all things imaginable are but nouns.

The other was a scheme for entirely abolishing all words whatsoever, and this was urged as a great advantage in point of health as well as brevity. For it is plain that every word we speak is in some degree a diminution of our lungs by corrosion, and, consequently, contributes to the shortening of our lives. An expedient was therefore offered, that, since words are only names for things, it would be more convenient for all men to carry about them such things as were necessary to express the particular business they are to discourse on. And this invention would certainly have taken place, to the great ease as well as health of the subject, if the women, in conjunction with the vulgar and illiterate, had not threatened to raise a rebellion, unless they might be allowed the liberty to speak with their tongues, after the manner of their ancestors ; such constant irreconcilable enemies to science are the common people.

However, many of the most learned and wise adhere to the new scheme of expressing themselves by things, which hath only this inconvenience attending it, that if a man's business be very great and of various kinds, he must be obliged, in proportion, to carry a great bundle of things upon his back, unless

he can afford one or two strong servants to attend him. I have often beheld two of those sages almost sinking under the weight of their packs, like pedlers among us ; who, when they met in the street, would lay down their loads, open their sacks, and hold conversation for an hour together, then put up their implements, help each other to resume their burthens, and take their leave.

But for short conversations, a man may carry implements in his pockets, and under his arms, enough to supply him : and in his house he cannot be at a loss. Therefore the room where company meet who practise this art is full of all things, ready at hand, requisite to furnish matter for this kind of artificial converse.

Another great advantage proposed by this invention was that it would serve as a universal language, to be understood in all civilized nations, whose goods and utensils are generally of the same kind, or nearly resembling, so that their uses might easily be comprehended. And thus ambassadors would be qualified to treat with foreign princes, or ministers of state, to whose tongues they were utter strangers.

I was at the mathematical school, where the master taught his pupils after a method scarce imaginable to us in Europe. The proposition and demonstration were fairly written on a thin wafer, with ink composed of a cephalic^o tincture. This the student was to swallow upon a fasting stomach, and for three days following ate nothing but bread and water. As the wafer digested the tincture mounted to his brain, bearing the proposition along with it. But the success hath not hitherto been satisfactory, partly by some error in the quantity or composition, and partly by the perverseness of lads, to whom this bolus is so nauseous that they generally steal aside and discharge it upward before it can operate ; neither have they been yet persuaded to use so long an abstinence from their usual food as the prescription requires.

CHAPTER V

The Author leaves Lagado — Arrives at Maldonada — No ship ready — He takes a short voyage to Glubbudbribb — His reception by the Governor.

I SAW nothing in this country that could invite me to a longer continuance, and began to think of returning home to England.

The continent, of which this kingdom is a part, extends itself, as I have reason to believe, eastward to that unknown tract of America westward of California, and north to the Pacific Ocean, which is not above a hundred and fifty miles from Lagado ; where there is a good port, and much commerce with the great island of Luggnagg, situated to the northwest, about 29 degrees north latitude, and 140 longitude. This island of Luggnagg stands southeastwards of Japan, about a hundred leagues distant. There is a strict alliance between the Japanese emperor and the king of Luggnagg, which affords frequent opportunities of sailing from one island to the other. I determined therefore to direct my course this way, in order to return to Europe. I hired two mules, with a guide, to show me the way, and carry my small baggage. I took leave of my noble protector, who had shown me so much favor, and made me a generous present at my departure.

My journey was without any accident or adventure worth relating. When I arrived at the port of Maldonada (for so it is called) there was no ship in the harbor bound for Luggnagg, nor like to be in some time. I soon fell into some acquaintance, and was very hospitably received. A gentleman of dis-

tion said to me, that since the ships bound for Luggnagg could not be ready in less than a month, it might be no disagreeable amusement for me to take a trip to the little island of Glubbdubdribb, about five leagues off to the southwest. He offered himself and a friend to accompany me, and that I should be provided with a convenient vessel for the voyage.

Glubbdubdribb, as nearly as I can interpret the word, signifies the island of sorcerers, or magicians.

It is about one-third as large as the Isle of Wight,^o and extremely fruitful ; it is governed by the head of a certain tribe, who are all magicians. This governor has a noble palace, and a park of about three thousand acres, surrounded by a wall of hewn stone twenty feet high.

The governor and his family are served and attended by domestics of a kind somewhat unusual. By his skill in necromancy, he has a power of calling whom he pleases from the dead, and commanding their services for twenty-four hours, but no longer ; nor can he call the same persons up again in less than three months, except upon very extraordinary occasions.

When we arrived at the island, which was about eleven in the morning, one of the gentlemen who accompanied me went to the governor, and desired admittance for a stranger. This was immediately granted, and we all three entered the gate of the palace between two rows of guards, armed and dressed after a very peculiar manner, and having something in their countenances that made my flesh creep with a horror I cannot express. We passed through several apartments, between servants of the same sort, ranked on each side as before, till we came to the chamber of presence, where, after three profound obeisances and a few general questions, we were permitted to sit on three stools, near the lowest step of his highness' throne. He understood the language of Balnibarbi, although it was different from that of his island. He desired me to give him some account of my travels ; and to let me see that I should be

treated without ceremony, he dismissed all his attendants with a turn of his finger ; at which to my great astonishment, they vanished in an instant, like visions in a dream when we awake on a sudden.

I could not recover myself, till the governor assured me that I should receive no hurt ; and observing my two companions to be under no concern, who had been often entertained in the same manner, I began to take courage, and related to his highness a short history of my several adventures ; yet not without some hesitation, and frequently looking behind me to the place where I had seen those domestic spectres. I had the honor to dine with the governor, where a new set of ghosts served the meat, and waited at table. I now observed myself to be less terrified than I had been in the morning. I stayed till sunset, but humbly desired his highness to excuse me for not accepting his invitation to lodge in the palace. My two friends and I lay at a private house in the town adjoining, which is the capital of this little island ; and the next morning we returned to pay our duty to the governor, as he was pleased to command us.

After this manner we continued in the island for ten days, most part of every day with the governor, and at night in our lodging. I soon grew so familiarized to the sight of spirits, that, after the third or fourth time, they gave me no emotion at all ; or, if I had any apprehensions left, my curiosity prevailed over them. For his highness the governor ordered me to call up whatever persons I would choose to name, and in whatever numbers, among all the dead from the beginning of the world to the present time, and command them to answer any questions I should think fit to ask ; with this condition, that my questions must be confined within the compass of the times they lived in. And one thing I might depend upon, that they would certainly tell me truth, for lying was a talent of no use in the lower world.

I made my humble acknowledgments to his highness for so

great a favor. We were in a chamber, whence there was a fair prospect into the park. And because my first inclination was to be entertained with scenes of pomp and magnificence, I desired to see Alexander the Great at the head of his army, just after the battle of Arbela^o; which, upon a motion of the governor's finger, immediately appeared in a large field, under the window where we stood.

I desired that the senate of Rome might appear before me in one large chamber, and a modern legislature, in counterview, in another. The first seemed to be an assembly of heroes and demi-gods; the other, a knot of pedlers, pickpockets, highwaymen, and bullies.

It would be tedious to trouble the reader with relating what vast numbers of illustrious persons were called up, to gratify that insatiable desire I had to see the world in every period of antiquity placed before me. I chiefly fed mine eyes with beholding the destroyers of tyrants and usurpers, and the restorers of liberty to oppressed and injured nations.

Having a desire to see those ancients who were most renowned for wit and learning, I set apart one day on purpose. I proposed that Homer and Aristotle might appear at the head of all their commentators; but these were so numerous that some hundreds were forced to attend in the court and outward rooms of the palace. I knew, and could distinguish the two heroes at first sight, not only from the crowd, but from each other. Homer was the taller and comelier person of the two, walked very erect for one of his age, and his eyes were the most quick and piercing I ever beheld.^o Aristotle stooped much, and made use of a staff. His visage was meagre, his hair lank and thin, and his voice hollow. I soon discovered that both of them were perfect strangers to the rest of the company, and had never seen or heard of them before. And I had a whisper from a ghost, who shall be nameless, that the commentators always kept in the most distant quarters from their principals, in the

lower world, through a consciousness of shame and guilt, because they had so horribly misrepresented the meaning of those authors to posterity.

I spent five days in conversing with many others of the ancient learned ; but my final three days, I employed in seeing some of the modern dead, who had made the greatest figure, for two or three hundred years past, in our own and other countries of Europe ; and having been always a great admirer of old illustrious families, I desired the governor would call up a dozen or two kings, counts, marquises, dukes, earls, and the like. And I confess, it was not without some pleasure, that I found myself able to trace the particular features, by which certain families are distinguished, up to their originals. I could plainly discover whence one family derives a long chin ; why a second hath abounded with knaves for two generations ; why a third happened to be crack-brained, and a fourth to be sharpeners ; how cruelty, falsehood, and cowardice grew to be characteristics by which certain families are distinguished, as much as by their coat of arms.

CHAPTER VI

The Author's return to Maldonada — Sails to the Kingdom of Luggnagg — The Author confined — He is sent for to Court — The manner of his Admittance — The King's great Lenity to his Subjects.

THE day of our departure being come, I took leave of his highness, the governor of Glubbudbribb, and returned with my two companions to Maldonada, where, after a fortnight's waiting, a ship was ready to sail for Luggnagg. The two gentlemen, and some others, were so generous and kind as to furnish me with provisions, and see me on board. I was a month in this voyage. We had one violent storm, and were under a necessity of steering westward to get into the trade wind. On the 21st of April, 1708, we sailed into the river of Clumegnig, which is a seaport town at the southeast point of Luggnagg. We cast anchor within a league of the town, and made a signal for a pilot. Two of them came on board in less than half an hour, by whom we were guided between certain shoals and rocks, which are very dangerous in the passage, to a large basin, where a fleet may ride in safety within a cable's length of the town wall.

Some of our sailors had informed the pilots that I was a stranger and a great traveller; whereof these gave notice to a custom-house officer, by whom I was examined very strictly upon my landing. This officer spoke to me in the language of Balnibarbi, which is generally understood in that town, especially by seamen and those employed in the customs. I told

the officer, that having been shipwrecked on the coast of Balnibarbi, and cast on a rock, I was received up into Laputa, or the Flying Island (of which he had often heard) and was now endeavoring to get to Japan, where I might find a way to return to my own country. The officer said I must be confined till he could receive orders from court ; for which he would write immediately, and hoped to receive an answer in a fortnight. I was carried to a convenient lodging, with a sentry placed at the door ; however, I had the liberty of a large garden, and was treated with humanity enough, being maintained all the time at the king's charge. I was visited by several persons, chiefly out of curiosity, because it was reported that I came from countries very remote, of which they had never heard.

I hired a young man, who came in the same ship, to be an interpreter. He was a native of Luggnagg, but had lived some years at Maldonada, and was a perfect master of both languages. By his assistance I was able to hold a conversation with those who came to visit me ; but this consisted only of their questions, and my answers.

The despatch came from court about the time we expected. It contained a warrant for conducting me and my retinue to *Trildrogdrib*, by a party of ten horse. All my retinue was that poor lad for an interpreter, whom I persuaded into my service ; and, at my humble request, we had each of us a mule to ride on. A messenger was despatched half a day's journey before us to give the king notice of my approach, and to desire that his majesty would please to appoint a day and hour when it would be his gracious pleasure that I might have the honor to lick the dust before his footstool. This is the court style, and I found it to be more than a matter of form. For, upon my admittance, two days after my arrival, I was commanded to crawl on my stomach, and lick the floor as I advanced ; but, on account of my being a stranger, care was taken to have it swept so clean that the dust was not offensive. However, this

was a peculiar grace, not allowed to any but persons of the highest rank, when they desire an admittance. Nay, sometimes the floor is strewed with dust on purpose, when the person to be admitted happens to have powerful enemies at court. And I have seen a great lord with his mouth so crammed that when he had crept to the proper distance from the throne he was not able to speak a word. Neither is there any remedy, because it is not allowed for those who receive an audience to spit or wipe their mouths in his majesty's presence.

There is, indeed, another custom, which I cannot altogether approve of; when the king hath a mind to put any of his nobles to death in a gentle, indulgent manner, he commands the floor to be strewed with a certain brown powder of a deadly composition, which, being licked up, infallibly kills the person who takes it into his mouth in twenty-four hours. But in justice to this prince's great clemency, and the care he hath for his subjects' lives, it must be mentioned for his honor that strict orders are given to have the infected parts of the floor well washed after every such execution; which, if his domestics neglect, they are in danger of incurring his royal displeasure. I myself heard him give directions that one of his pages should be whipped, whose turn it was to give notice about washing the floor after an execution, but maliciously had omitted it; by which neglect a young lord coming to an audience was unfortunately poisoned, although the king at that time had no design against his life. But this good prince was so gracious as to forgive the poor page his whipping, upon promise that he would do so no more, without special orders.

To return from this digression; when I had crept within four yards of the throne I raised myself gently upon my knees, and then, striking my forehead seven times against the ground, I pronounced the following words, as they had been taught me the night before: "*Inckpling gloffthrobb squut scrumm blhiop mlashnalt zwin tnodbalkuff hslhiophad gurdlubh asht.*"

This is the compliment, established by the laws of the land, for all persons admitted to the king's presence. It may be rendered into English thus: "May your celestial majesty out-live the sun eleven moons and a half!"

To this the king returned some answer, which, although I could not understand, yet I replied as I had been directed: "*Fluft drin yalerick dwuldom prastrad mirpush,*" which properly signifies, "My tongue is in the mouth of my friend;" and by this expression was meant that I desired leave to bring my interpreter; whereupon the young man already mentioned was introduced, by whose intervention I answered as many questions as his majesty could put in above an hour.

The king was much delighted with my company, and ordered his high chamberlain to appoint a lodging in the court for me and my interpreter, with a daily allowance for my table, and a large purse of gold for my common expenses.

CHAPTER VII

The Luggnaggians commended — A particular Description of the Struldbrugs, with many Conversations between the Author and some eminent Persons upon that subject — The Author leaves Luggnagg, and sails to Japan — Thence he goes in a Dutch ship to Amsterdam, and from Amsterdam to England.

THE Luggnaggians are a polite and generous people; and although they are not without some share of that pride which is peculiar to all eastern countries, yet they show themselves courteous to strangers, especially such who are countenanced by the court.

One day, in much good company, I was asked by a person of quality whether I had seen any of their *struldbrugs*, or immortals. I said I had not, and desired he would explain to me what he meant by such an appellation, applied to a mortal creature. He told me that sometimes, though very rarely, a child happened to be born in a family with a red circular spot in the forehead, directly over the left eyebrow, which was an infallible mark that it should never die. The spot, as he described it, was about the compass of a silver threepence, but in the course of time grew larger and changed its color; for at twelve years old it became green, so continued till twenty-five, then turned to a deep blue; at forty-five it grew coal-black and as large as an English shilling, but never admitted any further alteration. He said these births were so rare that he did not believe there could be above eleven hundred *struldbrugs*, of both sexes, in the whole kingdom, of which he computed

about fifty in the metropolis, and, among the rest, a young girl born about three years ago ; that these productions were not peculiar to any family, but a mere effect of chance, and the children of the *struldbrugs* themselves were equally mortal with the rest of the people.

I freely own myself to have been struck with inexpressible delight upon hearing this account : and the person who gave it me happening to understand the Balnibarbian language, which I spoke very well, I could not forbear breaking out into expressions, perhaps a little too extravagant. I cried out, as in a rapture : “ Happy nation, where every child has at least a chance for being immortal ! Happy people, who enjoy so many living examples of ancient virtue, and have masters ready to instruct them in the wisdom of all former ages ! But happiest, beyond all comparison, are those excellent *struldbrugs*, who, born exempt from that universal calamity of human nature, have their minds free and disengaged, without the weight and depression of spirits caused by the continual apprehension of death ! ” I mentioned my surprise, that I had not observed any of these illustrious persons at court ; the black spot on the forehead being so remarkable a distinction, that I could not have easily overlooked it ; and it was impossible that his majesty, a most judicious prince, should not provide himself with a good number of such wise and able counsellors. I was determined, that his majesty having frequently offered me an establishment in this country, I would with great thankfulness accept the favor, and pass my life here in the conversation of those superior beings, the *struldbrugs*, if they would please to admit me.

The gentleman to whom I addressed my discourse, said to me, with a sort of smile, which usually ariseth from pity to the ignorant, that he was glad of any occasion to keep me among them, and desired my permission to explain to the company what I had spoke. He did so, and they talked together for some time in their own language, whereof I understood not a

syllable, neither could I observe by their countenances what impression my discourse had made on them. After a short silence the same person told me that his friends were very much pleased with the judicious remarks I had made on the great happiness and advantages of immortal life, and they were desirous to know, in a particular manner, what scheme of living I should have formed if it had fallen to my lot to have been born a *struldbrug*.

I answered that, had it been my good fortune to come into the world a *struldbrug*, I would first resolve to procure myself riches; in the pursuit of which, by thrift and management, I might reasonably expect, in about two hundred years, to be the wealthiest man in the kingdom. In the second place, I would, from my earliest youth, apply myself to the study of arts and sciences, by which I should arrive in time to excel all others in learning. Lastly, I would carefully record every action and event of consequence, impartially draw the characters of the several successions of princes and great ministers of state, with my own observations on every point. I would exactly set down the several changes in customs, language, fashions of dress, diet, and diversions. By all which acquirements, I should be a living treasury of knowledge and wisdom, and certainly become the oracle of the nation.

I would never marry after threescore, but live in a hospitable manner, yet still on the saving side. I would entertain myself in forming and directing the minds of hopeful young men, by convincing them, from my own remembrance, experience, and observation, fortified by numerous examples, of the usefulness of virtue in public and private life. But my choice and constant companions should be a set of my own immortal brotherhood; among whom I would choose a dozen from the most ancient, down to my own contemporaries. Where any of these wanted fortunes, I would provide them with convenient lodges round my own estate, and have some of them always at

my table ; only mingling a few of the most valuable among you mortals.

These *struldbrugs* and I would mutually communicate our observations and recollections through the course of time ; remark the several gradations by which corruption steals into the world, and oppose it, by giving perpetual warning and instruction to mankind ; which added to the strong influence of our own example, would probably prevent that degeneracy of human nature, so justly complained of in all ages.

Add to all this, the pleasure of seeing the various changes in the world ; ancient cities in ruins, and obscure villages become the seats of kings ; the ocean leaving one coast dry, and overwhelming another ; the discovery of many countries yet unknown ; barbarity overrunning the politest nations, and the most barbarous become civilized. I should then see the discovery of perpetual motion, a medicine to cure all diseases, and other great inventions.

I enlarged upon many topics, which the natural desire of endless life could easily furnish me with. When I had ended, and the sum of my discourse had been interpreted, as before, to the rest of the company, there was a good deal of talk among them in the language of the country, not without some laughter at my expense. At last, the same gentleman who had been my interpreter said, he was desired by the rest to set me right in a few mistakes, which I had fallen into. That this breed of *struldbrugs* was peculiar to their country, for there were no such people either in Balnibarbi or Japan, where he had the honor to be ambassador from his majesty : and it appeared from my astonishment when he had first mentioned the matter to me, that I received it as a thing wholly new, and scarcely to be credited. That in the two kingdoms above mentioned, during his residence, he had observed long life to be the universal desire of mankind. That whoever had one foot in the grave was sure to hold the other from it as strongly as he could.

That the oldest had still hopes of living one day longer, and looked on death as the greatest evil, from which nature always prompted him to retreat. Only in this island of Luggnagg, the appetite for living was not so eager, from the continual example of the *struldbrugs* before their eyes.

That the system of living contrived by me was unreasonable and unjust, because it supposed a perpetuity of youth, health, and vigor, which no man could be so foolish to hope, however extravagant he may be in his wishes. That the question therefore was not, whether a man would choose to be always in the prime of youth, attended with prosperity and health; but how he would pass a perpetual life under all the usual disadvantages which old age brings along with it. For although few men will avow their desires of being immortal, upon such hard conditions, yet in the two kingdoms before mentioned, of Balnibarbi and Japan, he observed that every man desired to put off death for some time longer, let it approach ever so late; and he rarely heard of any man who died willingly, except he were incited by the extremity of grief or torture. And he appealed to me, whether in those countries I had travelled, as well as my own, I had not observed the same general disposition.

After this preface he gave me a particular account of the *struldbrugs* among them. He said they commonly acted like mortals till about thirty years old; after which, by degrees, they grew melancholy and dejected, till they came to fourscore. This he learned from their own confession; for otherwise, there not being above two or three of that species born in an age, they were too few to form a general observation by. When they came to fourscore years, which is reckoned the extremity of living in this country, they had not only all the infirmities of other old men, but many more, which arose from the dreadful prospect of never dying; and whenever they see a funeral, they lament and repine that others have gone to a harbor of rest to which they themselves never can hope to arrive.

They have no remembrance of anything but what they learned and observed in their youth and middle age, and even that is very imperfect. And for the truth or particulars of any fact, it is safer to depend on common tradition than upon their best recollections.

As soon as they have completed the term of eighty years they are looked on as dead in law ; their heirs immediately succeed to their estates, only a small pittance is reserved for their support ; and the poor ones are maintained at the public charge. After that period they are held incapable of any employment of trust or profit ; they cannot purchase land, or take leases ; neither are they allowed to be witnesses in any cause, either civil or criminal.

At ninety they lose their teeth and hair ; they have at that age no distinction of taste, but eat and drink whatever they can get, without relish or appetite. The diseases they were subject to still continue. In talking they forget the common appellation of things, and the names of persons, even of those who are their nearest friends and relations. For the same reason they never can amuse themselves with reading, because their memory will not serve to carry them from the beginning of a sentence to the end.

This was the account given me of the *struldbrugs*, as near as I can remember. I afterward saw five or six of different ages, the youngest not above two hundred years old, who were brought to me at several times by some of my friends ; but although they were told that I was a great traveller, and had seen all the world, they had not the least curiosity to ask me a question ; only desired I would give them a token of remembrance ; which is a modest way of begging, to avoid the law, that strictly forbids it, because they are provided for by the public, although, indeed, with a very scanty allowance.

When one of them is born it is reckoned ominous, and their birth is recorded very particularly : so that you may know their

age by consulting the register. But the usual way of computing how old they are is by asking them what kings or great persons they can remember, and then consulting history; for infallibly the last prince in their mind did not begin his reign after they were fourscore years old.

They were the most mortifying sight I ever beheld; and they acquired an additional ghastliness, in proportion to their number of years.

The reader will easily believe that, from what I had heard and seen, my keen appetite for perpetuity of life was much abated. I grew heartily ashamed of the pleasing visions I had formed; and thought no tyrant could invent a death into which I would not run with pleasure from such a life. The king heard of all that had passed between me and my friends upon this occasion, and rallied me very pleasantly; wishing I could send a couple of *struldbrugs* to my own country, to arm our people against the fear of death; but this, it seems, is forbidden by the fundamental laws of the kingdom, or else I should have been well content with the trouble and expense of transporting them.

His majesty having often pressed me to accept some employment in his court, and finding me absolutely determined to return to my native country, was pleased to give me liberty to depart; and honored me with a letter of recommendation, under his own hand, to the Emperor of Japan. He likewise presented me with four hundred and forty-four large pieces of gold (this nation delighting in even numbers) and a red diamond, which I sold in England for eleven hundred pounds.

On the 6th of May, 1709, I took a solemn leave of his majesty and all my friends. This prince was so gracious as to order a guard to conduct me to Glanguenstald, which is a royal port to the southwest part of the island. In six days I found a vessel ready to carry me to Japan, and spent fifteen days in the voyage. We landed at a small port town called Xamoschi,

situated on the southeast part of Japan. At landing I showed the custom-house officers my letter from the King of Luggnagg to his imperial majesty. The magistrates of the town, hearing of my letter, provided me with carriages and servants, and bore my charges to Tokio. There I delivered my letter, which was opened with great ceremony, and explained to the emperor by an interpreter; who then gave me notice, by his majesty's order, that I should signify my request, and whatever it were, it should be granted, for the sake of his royal brother of Luggnagg. This interpreter was a person employed to transact affairs with the Hollanders. He soon conjectured, by my countenance, that I was a European, and therefore repeated his majesty's commands in Dutch, which he spoke perfectly well. I answered that I was a merchant, shipwrecked in a very remote country. Thence I had travelled by sea and land to Luggnagg, and then took shipping for Japan, where I hoped to get an opportunity of returning to Europe. I therefore most humbly entreated his royal favor, to give order that I should be conducted in safety to Nagasaki. Some troops being at that time on their march thither, the commanding officer had orders to convey me safe to that city.

On the 9th day of June, 1709, I arrived at Nagasaki, after a very long and troublesome journey. I soon fell into the company of some Dutch sailors belonging to the *Amboyna*, of Amsterdam, a stout ship of four hundred and fifty tons. I had lived long in Holland, pursuing my studies at Leyden, and I spoke Dutch well. I would have given the captain what he pleased to ask for my voyage to Holland; but understanding I was a surgeon, he was contented to take half the usual rate, on condition that I would serve him in the way of my calling.

Nothing happened worth mentioning in this voyage. We sailed with a fair wind to the Cape of Good Hope, where we stayed only to take in fresh water. On the 10th of April,

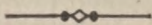
1710, we arrived safe at Amsterdam, and thence I soon after set sail for England.

On the 16th of April we put in at the Downs. I landed the next morning and saw, once more, my native country, after an absence of five years and six months. I went straight to Redriff, where I arrived the same day at two in the afternoon, and found my wife and family in good health.

PART IV

A VOYAGE TO THE COUNTRY OF THE
HOUYHNNHMS

A VOYAGE TO THE COUNTRY OF THE HOUYHNHNMS



CHAPTER I

The Author sets out as Captain of a Ship — His Men conspire against him — Confine him a long time to his Cabin — Set him on shore in an Unknown Land — He travels up into the Country — The Yahoos, a strange sort of Animal, described — The Author meets two Houyhnhnms.

I CONTINUED at home with my wife and children about five months, and then accepted an advantageous offer made me to be captain of the *Adventure*, a stout merchantman of three hundred and fifty tons : for I understood navigation well. We set sail from Portsmouth on the 7th day of September, 1710.

I had several men die in my ship of fever, so that I was forced to get recruits out of Barbadoes and the Leeward Islands, where I touched, by the direction of the merchants who employed me ; which I had soon too much cause to repent ; for I found afterward that most of the new men had been buccaneers.^o I now had fifty hands on board ; and my orders were that I should trade in the South Seas, and make what discoveries I could. These rogues, whom I had picked up, debauched my other men, and they all formed a conspiracy to seize the ship and secure me ; which they did one morning, rushing into my

cabin, and binding me hand and foot, threatening to throw me overboard if I offered to stir.

I told them I was their prisoner, and would submit. This they made me swear to do, and then they unbound me, only fastening one of my legs with a chain, near my bed, and placed a sentry at my door with his gun charged, who was commanded to shoot me dead if I attempted to gain my liberty. They sent me down victuals and drink, and took the government of the ship to themselves. Their design was to turn pirates, and plunder the Spaniards, which they could not do till they got more men. But first they resolved to sell the goods in the ship, and then go to Madagascar^o for recruits. They sailed many weeks, and traded with the Indians; but I knew not what course they took, being kept a close prisoner in my cabin, and expecting nothing less than to be murdered, as they often threatened me.

On the 9th day of May, 1711, one James Welch came down to my cabin, and said he had orders from the captain to set me ashore. I expostulated with him, but in vain. They forced me into the long-boat, letting me put on my best suit of clothes, which were as good as new, and take a small bundle of linen, but no arms, except my hanger; and they were so civil as not to search my pockets, into which I conveyed what money I had, with some other little necessities. They rowed about a league, and then set me down on a strand. I desired them to tell me what country it was. They all swore they knew no more than myself. They pushed off immediately, advising me to make haste, for fear of being overtaken by the tide, and so bade me farewell.

In this desolate condition I advanced forward, and soon got to firm ground, where I sat down on a bank to rest myself, and consider what I had best do. When I was a little refreshed I went up into the country, resolving to deliver myself to the first savages I should meet, and purchase my life from them by

some bracelets, glass rings, and other toys, which sailors usually provide themselves with in those voyages, and whereof I had some about me. The land was divided by long rows of trees, not regularly planted, but naturally growing; there was plenty of grass, and several fields of oats. I walked very circumspectly, for fear of being surprised or suddenly shot with an arrow from behind, or on either side. I fell into a beaten road, where I saw many tracks of human feet, and some of cows, but most of horses. At last I beheld several animals in a field, and one or two of the same kind sitting in trees. Their shape was very singular and deformed, which a little discomposed me, so that I lay down behind a thicket to observe them better. Some of them coming forward near the place where I lay, gave me an opportunity of distinctly marking their form. Their heads and breasts were covered with a thick hair, some frizzled, and some lank; they had beards like goats, and a long ridge of hair down their backs, and on the foreparts of their legs and feet; but the rest of their bodies was bare, so that I could see their skins, which were of a brown color. They had no tails. They often sat on the ground, and often stood on their hind feet. They climbed high trees as nimbly as a squirrel, for they had strong extended claws, terminating in sharp points, and hooked. They would often spring, and bound and leap, with prodigious agility. The females were not so large as the males. They had long hair on their heads, but none on their faces, nor anything more than a sort of down on the rest of their bodies. The hair of both sexes was of several colors — brown, red, black, and yellow. Upon the whole, I never beheld, in all my travels, so disagreeable an animal, nor one against which I naturally conceived so strong an antipathy. So that, thinking I had seen enough, full of contempt and aversion, I got up, and pursued the beaten road, hoping it might direct me to the cabin of some Indian. I had not gone far when I met one of the creatures full in my way, and coming up directly to me. The

ugly monster, when he saw me, distorted several ways every feature of his visage, and stared, as at an object he had never seen before ; then approaching nearer, lifted up his forepaw, whether out of curiosity or mischief, I could not tell : but I drew my hanger, and gave him a good blow with the flat side of it ; for I durst not strike him with the edge, fearing the inhabitants might be provoked against me, if they should come to know that I had killed or maimed any of their cattle. When the beast felt the smart, he drew back, and roared so loud that a herd of at least forty came flocking about me from the next field, howling, and making odious faces ; but I ran to the body of a tree, and leaning my back against it, kept them off by waving my hanger.

In the midst of this distress I observed them all to run away on a sudden as fast as they could ; at which I ventured to leave the tree, and pursue the road, wondering what it was that could put them into this fright. But, looking on my left hand, I saw a horse walking softly in the field, which my persecutors having sooner discovered, was the cause of their flight. The horse started a little when he came near me, but, quickly recovering himself, looked full in my face, with manifest tokens of wonder. He viewed my hands and feet, walking round me several times. I would have pursued my journey, but he placed himself directly in the way, yet, looking with a very mild aspect, never offering the least violence. We stood gazing at each other for some time. At last I took the boldness to reach my hand toward his neck, with a design to stroke it, using the common style and whistle of jockeys when they are going to handle a strange horse. But this animal seemed to receive my civilities with disdain, shook his head, and bent his brows, softly raising up his right forefoot to remove my hand. Then he neighed three or four times, but in so different a cadence that I almost began to think he was speaking to himself in some language of his own.

While he and I were thus employed another horse came up, who went to the first in a very formal manner, and the two gently struck each other's right front hoof, neighing several times by turns, and varying the sound, which seemed to be almost articulate. They went some paces off, as if it were to confer together, walking side by side, backward and forward, like persons deliberating upon some affair of weight, but often turning their eyes toward me, as it were to watch that I might not escape. I was amazed to see such actions and behavior in brute beasts, and concluded that if the inhabitants of this country were endued with a proportionable degree of reason they must needs be the wisest people upon earth. This thought gave me so much comfort that I resolved to go forward until I could discover some house or village, or meet with any of the natives, leaving the two horses to discourse together as they pleased. But the first, who was a dapple gray, observing me to steal off, neighed after me in so expressive a tone that I fancied myself to understand what he meant; whereupon I turned back, and came near to him, to expect his further commands, but concealing my fear as much as I could, for I began to be in some anxiety as to how this adventure might terminate; and the reader will easily believe I did not much like my present situation.

The two horses came up close to me, looking with great earnestness upon my face and hands. The gray steed rubbed my hat all round with his right forehoof, and discomposed it so much that I was forced to adjust it better, by taking it off, and settling it again; whereat both he and his companion (who was a brown bay) appeared to be much surprised. The latter felt the skirt of my coat, and, finding it to hang loose about me, they both looked with new signs of wonder. He stroked my right hand, seeming to admire the softness and color, but he squeezed it so hard between his hoof and his pastern that I was forced to roar; after which they both touched me with all

possible tenderness. They were under great perplexity about my shoes and stockings, which they felt very often, neighing to each other, and using various gestures, not unlike those of a philosopher when he would attempt to solve some new and difficult phenomenon.

Upon the whole the behavior of these animals was so orderly and rational, so acute and judicious, that I at last concluded they must needs be magicians, who had thus metamorphosed themselves, and, seeing a stranger in the way, were resolved to divert themselves with him, or perhaps were really amazed at the sight of a man so very different in habit, feature, and complexion, from those who might probably live in so remote a climate. Upon the strength of this reasoning I ventured to address them in the following manner: "Gentlemen, if you be conjurors, as I have good cause to believe, you can understand any language; therefore I make bold to let your worships know that I am a poor, distressed Englishman, driven by his misfortunes upon your coast; and I entreat one of you to let me ride on his back, as if he were a real horse, to some house or village where I can be relieved. In return of which favor I will make you a present of this knife and bracelet" (taking them out of my pocket). The two creatures stood silent while I spoke, seeming to listen with great attention; and when I had ended they neighed frequently toward each other, as if they were engaged in serious conversation. I plainly observed that their language expressed the passions very well, and their words might, with little pains, be resolved into an alphabet more easily than the Chinese.

I could frequently distinguish the word *Yahoo*, which was repeated by each of them several times; and, although it was impossible for me to conjecture what it meant, yet, while the two horses were busy in conversation, I endeavored to practice this word upon my tongue; and as soon as they were silent I

boldly pronounced *Yahoo* in a loud voice, imitating at the same time, as near as I could, the neighing of a horse, at which they were both visibly surprised ; and the gray repeated the same word twice, as if he meant to teach me the right accent. I spoke after him as well as I could, and found myself perceivably to improve every time, though very far from any degree of perfection. Then the bay tried me with a second word, much harder to be pronounced, but, reducing it to the English orthography, it may be spelt thus, *Houyhnhnm*. I did not succeed in this so well as in the former ; but after two or three further trials I had better fortune, and they both appeared amazed at my capacity.

After some further discourse, which I then conjectured might relate to me, the two friends took their leave, with the same compliment of striking each other's hoof, and the gray made me signs that I should walk before him ; wherein I thought it prudent to comply, till I could find a better director. When I offered to slacken my pace, he would cry, *hhuun, hhuun*. I guessed his meaning, and gave him to understand, as well as I could, that I was weary, and not able to walk faster ; upon which he would stand awhile to let me rest.

CHAPTER II

The Author conducted by a Houyhnhnm to his House — The House described — The Author's reception — The Food of the Houyhnhnms — The Author's manner of feeding in this Country.

HAVING travelled about three miles, we came to a long kind of building, made of timbers stuck in the ground, and wattled across. The roof was low, and covered with straw. I now began to be a little comforted, and took out some toys, which travellers usually carry for presents to the savage Indians of America, and other parts, in hopes the people of the house would be thereby encouraged to receive me kindly. The horse made me a sign to go in first, and I entered a large room, with a smooth clay floor, and a rack and manger extending the whole length on one side. There were several horses in the room, some of them sitting down on their haunches, which I very much wondered at, but wondered more to see the rest employed in domestic business.

Beyond this room there were three others, reaching the length of the house, to which you passed through three doors, opposite to each other, in the manner of a vista. We went through the second room toward the third. Here the gray walked in first, beckoning me to remain where I was. I waited in the second room, and got ready my presents for the master and mistress of the house. They were two knives, three bracelets of false pearls, a small looking-glass, and a bead necklace. The horse neighed three or four times, and I waited to hear some answers in a human voice, but I observed no other returns than in the same dialect, only one or two a little

shriller than his. I began to think that this house must belong to some person of great note among them, because there appeared so much ceremony before I could gain admittance. But, that a man of quality should be served all by horses, was beyond my comprehension. I feared my brain was disturbed by my sufferings and misfortunes. I roused myself, and looked about me in the room where I was left alone. This was furnished like the first, only after a more elegant manner. I rubbed my eyes often, but the same objects were still in my sight. I pinched my arms and sides to awake myself, hoping I might be in a dream. I then absolutely concluded that all these appearances could be nothing else but necromancy and magic. But I had no time to pursue these reflections; for the gray horse came to the door, and made me a sign to follow him into the third room, where I saw a very comely mare, together with two colts, sitting on their haunches upon mats of straw, perfectly neat and clean.

The mare, soon after my entrance, rose from her mat, and coming close, after having nicely observed my hands and face, gave me a most contemptuous look, then turning to the horse, I heard the word *Yahoo* often repeated betwixt them, the meaning of which word I could not then comprehend. But the horse, beckoning to me with his head and repeating the word *hhuun*, *hhuun*, as he did upon the road, which I understood was to attend him, led me out into a kind of court, where was another building at some distance from the house. Here we entered, and I saw three of those detestable creatures which I first met after my landing, feeding upon roots and the flesh of some animals, which I afterward found to be that of asses and dogs, and now and then a cow, dead by accident or disease. They were all tied by the neck with strong withes fastened to a beam. They held their food between the claws of their forefeet, and tore it with their teeth.

The master horse ordered a sorrel nag, one of his servants, to

untie the largest of these animals, and take him into the yard. The beast and I were brought close together, and our countenances diligently compared, both by master and servant, who thereupon repeated several times the word *Yahoo*. My horror and astonishment are not to be described when I observed in this abominable animal a perfect human figure; though the face of it was flat and broad, the nose depressed, the lips large, and the mouth wide. The forefeet of the Yahoo differed from my hands in nothing else but the length of the nails, the coarseness and brownness of the palms, and the hairiness on the backs. There was the same resemblance between our feet, with the same differences which I knew very well, though the horses did not, because of my shoes and stockings.

The great difficulty that seemed to stick with the two horses was to see the rest of my body so very different from that of a Yahoo; for which I was obliged to my clothes, whereof they had no conception. The sorrel nag offered me a root, which he held between his hoof and pastern. I took it in my hand, and, having smelled it, returned it to him as civilly as I could. He brought out of the Yahoo's kennel a piece of ass's flesh; but it smelled so offensive that I turned from it with loathing. He then threw it to the Yahoo, by whom it was greedily devoured. He afterward showed me a wisp of hay, and some oats; but I shook my head, to signify that neither of these was food for me. And indeed I now apprehended that I must absolutely starve if I did not get to some of my own species; for, as to those filthy Yahoos, I confess I never saw any sensitive being so detestable. This the master horse observed by my behavior, and therefore sent the Yahoo back to his kennel. He then put his forehoof to his mouth, at which I was much surprised, although he did it with ease, and with a motion that appeared perfectly natural; and made other signs to know what I would eat; but I could not return him such an answer as he was able to apprehend; and if he had understood me, I did not see how it was possible

to contrive any way for finding myself nourishment. While we were thus engaged I observed a cow passing by, whereupon I pointed to her, and expressed a desire to go and milk her. This had its effect; for he led me back into the house, and ordered a mare servant to open a room, where a good store of milk lay in earthen and wooden vessels, after a very orderly and cleanly manner. She gave me a large bowlful, of which I drank very heartily, and found myself well refreshed.

About noon I saw coming toward the house a kind of vehicle drawn like a sledge by four Yahoos. There was in it an old steed, who seemed to be of quality; he alighted with his hind feet forward, having by accident got a hurt in his left forefoot. He came to dine with our horse, who received him with great civility. They dined in the best room, and had oats boiled in milk for the second course, which the old horse ate warm, but the rest ate it cold. Their mangers were placed circular in the middle of the room, and divided by several partitions, round which they sat on their haunches upon mats of straw. In the middle was a large rack, with angles answering to every partition of the manger; so that each horse and mare ate their own hay, and their own mash of oats and milk, with much decency and regularity. The behavior of the young colts appeared very modest, and that of the master and mistress extremely cheerful and complaisant to their guest. The gray ordered me to stand by him; and much discourse passed between him and his friend concerning me, as I found by the stranger's often looking on me, and the frequent repetition of the word Yahoo.

I happened to wear my gloves, which the master gray observing, seemed perplexed, discovering signs of wonder what I had done to my forefeet. He put his hoof three or four times to them, as if he would signify that I should reduce them to their former shape; which I presently did, pulling off both my gloves, and putting them into my pocket. This occasioned

further talk: and I saw the company was pleased with my behavior, whereof I soon found the good effects. I was ordered to speak the few words I understood; and while they were at dinner, the master taught me the names for oats, milk, fire, water, and some other things which I could readily pronounce after him, having from my youth a great facility in learning languages.

When dinner was done, the master horse took me aside, and by signs and words made me understand the concern he was in that I had nothing to eat. Oats in their tongue are called *hlunnh*. This word I pronounced two or three times; for although I had refused them at first, yet, upon second thoughts, I considered that I could contrive to make of them a kind of bread, which might be sufficient, with milk, to keep me alive till I could make my escape to some other country, and to creatures of my own species. The horse immediately ordered a white mare-servant of his family to bring me a good quantity of oats in a sort of wooden tray. These I heated before the fire, as well as I could, and rubbed them till the husks came off, which I contrived to winnow from the grain. I ground and beat them between two stones, then took water, and made them into a paste or cake, which I toasted at the fire, and ate warm with milk. It was at first a very insipid diet, though common enough in many parts of Europe, but grew tolerable by time; and having been often reduced to hard fare in my life, this was not the first experiment I had made how easily nature is satisfied. And I cannot but observe that I never had one hour's sickness while I stayed in this island. 'Tis true, I sometimes managed to catch a rabbit, or bird, by snares made of Yahoos' hairs; and I often gathered wholesome herbs, which I boiled, or ate as salads with my bread; and now and then, for a rarity, I made a little butter, and drank the whey. I was at first at a great loss for salt, but custom soon reconciled me to the want of it: and I am confident that the frequent use of salt

among us is an effect of luxury, and was first introduced only as a provocative to drink, except where it is necessary for preserving flesh in long voyages, or in places remote from great markets: and, when I left this country, it was a great while before I could endure the taste of salt in anything that I ate.

When it grew toward evening, the master horse ordered a place for me to lodge in. It was but six yards from the house, and separated from the stable of the Yahoos. Here I got some straw, and slept very sound.

CHAPTER III

The Author studies to learn the Language — The Houyhnhnm, his Master, assists in teaching him — The Language described — Several Houyhnhnms of quality come out of curiosity to see the Author — He gives his Master a short account of his Voyage.

My principal endeavor was to learn the language, which my master (for so I shall henceforth call him) and his children, and every servant of his house, were desirous to teach me : for they looked upon it as a prodigy that a brute animal should discover such marks of a rational creature. I pointed to everything, and inquired the name of it, and corrected my bad accent by desiring those of the family to pronounce it often. In this employment a sorrel nag, one of the under-servants, was very ready to assist me.

In speaking, they pronounce through the nose and throat ; and their language approaches nearest to the German, of any I know in Europe ; but is much more graceful and significant.

The curiosity and impatience of my master were so great that he spent many hours of his leisure to instruct me. He was convinced (as he afterward told me) that I must be a Yahoo ; but my teachableness, civility, and cleanliness astonished him ; which were qualities altogether opposite to such as belonged to those animals. My master was eager to learn whence I came ; how I acquired those appearances of reason which I discovered in all my actions ; and to know my story from my own mouth ; which he hoped he should soon do, by the great proficiency I made in learning and pronouncing their words and sentences.

To help my memory, I writ down the words I learned, with the translations. This last, after some time, I ventured to do in my master's presence. It cost me much trouble to explain to him what I was doing; for the inhabitants have not the least idea of books and literature.

In about ten weeks' time I was able to understand most of his questions, and in three months could give him some tolerable answers. He was extremely curious to know from what part of the country I came, and how I was taught to imitate a rational creature; because the Yahoos (whom he saw I exactly resembled) with some appearance of cunning, and the strongest disposition to mischief, were the most unteachable of all brutes. I answered that I came over the sea, from a far place, with many others of my own kind, in a great hollow vessel, made of the bodies of trees: that my companions forced me to land on this coast, and then left me to shift for myself. It was with some difficulty, and by the help of many signs, that I brought him to understand me. He replied that I must needs be mistaken, or that I said the thing which was not; for they have no word in their language to express lying or falsehood. He knew it was impossible that there could be a country beyond the sea, or that a parcel of brutes could move a wooden vessel whither they pleased upon water. He was sure no Houyhnhnm alive could make such a vessel, nor would trust Yahoos to manage it.

The word *Houyhnhnm*, in their tongue, signifies a *horse*, and, in its etymology, *the perfection of nature*. I told my master that I was at a loss for expression, but would improve as fast as I could; and hoped in a short time I should be able to tell him wonders. Several horses and mares of quality in the neighborhood came often to our house, upon the report spread of a wonderful Yahoo that could speak like a Houyhnhnm, and seemed, in his words and actions, to discover some glimmerings of reason. These delighted to converse with me. They put

many questions, and received such answers as I was able to return. By these advantages I made so great a progress that in five months from my arrival I understood whatever was spoken, and could express myself tolerably well.

The Houyhnhnms, who came to visit my master out of a design of seeing and talking with me, could hardly believe me to be a real Yahoo, because my body had a different covering from others of my kind.

I had concealed the secret of my dress, in order to distinguish myself, as much as I could, from the cursed race of Yahoos ; but now I considered that my clothes and shoes would soon wear out, which already were in a declining condition, and must be supplied by some contrivance, from the hides of Yahoos, or other brutes ; whereby the whole secret would be known. I therefore told my master that in the country whence I came those of my kind always covered their bodies with the hairs of certain animals, prepared by art, to avoid the inclemencies of air, both hot and cold.

I expressed my uneasiness at his giving me so often the appellation of Yahoo, an odious animal, for which I had so utter a hatred and contempt. I begged he would forbear applying that word to me, and make the same order in his family and among his friends whom he suffered to see me. I requested likewise that the secret of my having a false covering to my body might be known to none but himself, at least as long as my present clothing should last.

All this my master very graciously consented to. In the meantime he desired I would go on with my utmost diligence to learn their language, because he waited with some impatience to hear the wonders which I promised to tell him.

Every day, when I waited on him, besides the trouble he was at in teaching, he would ask me several questions concerning myself, which I answered as well as I could ; and by these means he had already received some general ideas, though very

imperfect. The first account I gave of myself in any order and length was to this purpose :

That I came from a very far country, with about fifty more of my own species ; that we travelled upon the seas in a great, hollow vessel made of wood, and larger than his honor's house. I described the ship to him in the best terms I could, and explained, by the help of my handkerchief, how it was driven forward by the wind. That, upon a quarrel among us, I was set on shore on this coast, where I walked forward, without knowing whither, till he delivered me from the persecution of those execrable Yahoos.

He asked me who made the ship, and how it was possible that the Houyhnhnms of my country would leave it to the management of brutes ? My answer was, that I durst proceed no further in my relation, unless he would give me his word and honor that he would not be offended. He agreed, and I went on by assuring him that the ship was made by creatures like myself ; who, in all the countries I had travelled, as well as in my own, were the only governing rational animals : and that, on my arrival here, I was as much astonished to see the Houyhnhnms act like rational beings as he, or his friends, could be in finding some marks of reason in a creature he was pleased to call a Yahoo ; to which I owned my resemblance, but could not account for their degenerate and brutal nature. I said further that if good fortune ever restored me to my native country to relate my travels hither, everybody would believe that I said the thing which was not, that I invented the story out of my own head ; and (with all possible respect to himself, his family and friends) our countrymen would hardly think it probable that a Houyhnhnm should be the presiding creature of a nation, and a Yahoo the brute.

CHAPTER IV

The Houyhnhnms' notion of Truth and Falsehood — The Author's discourse disapproved by his Master — The Author gives a more particular account of himself, and the Accidents of his Voyage.

My master heard me with great appearances of uneasiness in his countenance ; because doubting, or not believing, are so little known in this country that the inhabitants cannot tell how to behave themselves under such circumstances. And I remember, in frequent discourses with my master concerning the nature of manhood in other parts of the world, having occasion to talk of lying and false representation, it was with much difficulty that he comprehended what I meant, although he had otherwise a most acute judgment ; for he argued thus : That the use of speech was to make us understand one another, and to receive information of facts. Now if any one said the thing which was not, those ends were defeated ; and I am so far from receiving information that he leaves me worse than in ignorance ; for I am led to believe a thing black when it is white, and short when it is long. And these were all the notions he had concerning that faculty of lying, so perfectly well understood, and so universally practised among human creatures.

To return from this digression. When I asserted that the Yahoos were the only governing animals in my country, which my master said was altogether past his conception, he desired to know whether we had Houyhnhnms among us, and what was their employment ? I told him we had great numbers ;

that in summer they grazed in the fields, and in winter were kept in houses with hay and oats, where Yahoo servants were employed to rub their skins smooth, comb their manes, serve them with food, and make their beds.

“I understand you well,” said my master; “it is now very plain, from all you have spoken, that whatever share of reason the Yahoos pretend to, the Houyhnhnms are your masters. I heartily wish our Yahoos would be so tractable.”

I begged his honor would please to excuse me from proceeding any further, because I was very certain that the account he expected from me would be highly displeasing. But he persisted in commanding me to let him know the best and the worst.

I told him that the Houyhnhnms among us, whom we called *horses*, were the most generous and comely animals we had; that they excelled in strength and swiftness; and, when they belonged to persons of quality, were employed in travelling, racing, or drawing carriages. They were treated with much kindness and care till they fell into diseases; and then they were used for all kinds of drudgery till they died; after which their skins were stripped off, and sold, and their bodies left to be devoured by dogs and birds of prey. As for the common race of horses, they were kept by farmers and carriers, and other people, who put them to greater labor, and fed them worse.

I described, as well as I could, our way of riding; the shape and use of a bridle, a saddle, a spur, and a whip; of harness and wheels. I added that we fastened plates of a certain hard substance, called iron, at the bottom of the horses' feet, to preserve their hoofs from being broken by the stony ways on which we often travelled.

My master, after some expressions of great indignation, wondered how we dared to venture upon a Houyhnhnm's back; for he was sure that the weakest servant in his house would be

able to shake off the strongest Yahoo, or, by lying down, and rolling on his back, squeeze the brute to death. I answered, that our horses were trained, from three or four years old, to the several uses we intended them for; that if any of them proved intolerably vicious, they were severely beaten; that they were sensible of rewards and punishments; but his honor would please to consider that they had not the least tincture of reason, any more than the Yahoos in this country.

It put me to the pains of many circumlocutions to give my master a right idea of what I spoke; for their language doth not abound in variety of words, because their wants and passions are fewer than among us. But it is impossible to express his noble resentment at our savage treatment of the Houyhnhnm race. He said, if it were possible there could be any country where Yahoos alone were endued with reason, they certainly must be the governing animal; because reason will, in time, always prevail against brutal strength. But, considering the frame of our bodies, he thought no creature of equal bulk was so ill contrived for employing that reason in the common offices of life. He said I differed indeed from other Yahoos, being much more cleanly, and not altogether so deformed; but, in point of real advantage, he thought I differed for the worse. That my nails were of no use either to my fore or hinder feet. As to my forefeet, he could not properly call them by that name, for he never observed me to walk upon them; that they were too soft to bear the ground; that I generally went with them uncovered; neither was the covering I sometimes wore on them of the same shape, or so strong as that on my feet behind. That I could not walk with any security, for if either of my hinder feet slipped, I must inevitably fall. He then began to find fault with other parts of my body: the flatness of my face, the prominence of my nose, mine eyes placed directly in front, so that I could not look on either side without turning my head; that I was not able to feed myself without lifting one of my forefeet to my mouth;

and therefore nature had placed those joints to answer that necessity. He knew not what could be the use of those several clefts and divisions in my feet behind ; that my feet were too soft to bear the hardness and sharpness of stones, without a covering made from the skin of some other brute ; that my whole body wanted a defence against heat and cold, which I was forced to put on and off every day, with tediousness and trouble. And lastly, that he observed every animal in this country naturally to abhor the Yahoos, whom the weaker avoided, and the stronger drove from them. So that he could not see how it were possible to cure that natural antipathy which every creature discovered against us ; nor, consequently, how we could tame and render them serviceable. However, he would, as he said, debate the matter no further, because he was desirous to know my own story.

I said my birth was of honest parents, in an island called England, which was remote from this country as many days' journey as the strongest of his honor's servants could travel in the annual course of the sun ; that I was bred a surgeon, whose trade is to cure wounds and hurts in the body, gotten by accident or violence ; that I left my country to get riches, whereby I might maintain myself and family, when I should return ; that in my last voyage I was commander of the ship, and had about fifty Yahoos under me, many of which died at sea, and I was forced to supply their places by others picked out from several nations. Here my master interposed, by asking me how I could persuade strangers, out of different countries, to venture with me, after the losses I had sustained ? I said they were fellows of desperate fortunes, forced to fly from the places of their birth on account of their poverty or their crimes. Some were undone by lawsuits ; others spent all they had in drinking, debauchery, and gaming ; others fled for treason ; many for murder, theft, poisoning, robbery, or coining false money ; and most of them had broken prison. None

of these durst return to their native countries, for fear of being hanged, or of starving in a jail ; and therefore they were under a necessity of seeking a livelihood in other places.

During this discourse my master was pleased to interrupt me several times. I had made use of many circumlocutions in describing to him the nature of the several crimes for which most of our crew had been forced to fly from their country. This labor took up several days' conversation before he was able to comprehend me. He was wholly at a loss to know what could be the use or necessity of practising those vices : to clear up which I endeavored to give him some ideas of the desire of power and riches ; of the terrible effects of intemperance, malice, and envy. After which, like one whose imagination was struck with something never seen or heard of before, he would lift up his eyes with amazement and indignation. Power, government, war, law, punishment, and a thousand other things had no terms wherein that language could express them, which made the difficulty almost insuperable, to give my master any conception of what I meant. But being of an excellent understanding, much improved by contemplation and converse, he at last arrived at a competent knowledge of what human nature, in our parts of the world, is capable to perform, and desired I would give him some particular account of that land which we call Europe, but especially of my own country.

CHAPTER V

The Author, at his Master's command, informs him of England —
The causes of war among the Princes of Europe — The Author
explains the condition of England under Queen Anne.

THE reader may please to observe that the following extract of many conversations I had with my master contains a summary of the most material points which were discoursed at several times for above two years ; his honor often desiring fuller satisfaction, as I further improved in the Houyhnhnm tongue. I laid before him, as well as I could, the whole state of Europe. But I shall here only set down the substance of what passed between us concerning my own country.

I related to him the revolution under the Prince of Orange^o ; the long war with France, entered into by the said prince, and renewed by his successor, the present queen, wherein the greatest powers of Christendom were engaged, and which still continued. I computed, at his request, that about a million of Yahoos had been killed in the whole progress of it ; and perhaps a hundred or more cities taken, and five times as many ships burned or sunk.

He asked me what were the usual causes or motives that made one country go to war with another ? I answered they were innumerable, but I should only mention a few of the chief. Sometimes the ambition of princes, who never think they have land or people enough to govern ; sometimes the corruption of ministers, who engage their master in a war in order to stifle or divert the clamor of the subjects against their evil adminis-

tration. Difference in opinions is also a cause. Neither are any other wars so furious and bloody, or of so long continuance, as those occasioned by difference in opinions.

Sometimes the quarrel between two princes is to decide which of them shall dispossess a third of his dominions, where neither of them pretend to any right. Sometimes one prince quarrelleth with another, for fear the other should quarrel with him. Sometimes our neighbors want the things which we have, or have the things which we want, and we both fight till they take ours, or give us theirs. If a prince sends forces into a nation where the people are poor and ignorant, he may lawfully put half of them to death, and make slaves of the rest, in order to civilize and compel them to abandon their barbarous way of living.

What you have told me, said my master, upon the subject of war, does, indeed, discover most admirably the effects of that reason you pretend to. However, it is happy that nature hath left you utterly incapable of doing much mischief; for your mouths lying flat with your faces, you can hardly bite each other to any purpose. Then as to the claws upon your feet, before and behind, they are so short and tender that one of our Yahoos would drive a dozen of yours before him. And therefore, in recounting the numbers of those who have been killed in battle, I cannot but think that you have said the thing which is not.

I could not forbear shaking my head, and smiling a little at his ignorance. And I gave him a description of cannons, muskets, pistols, bullets, powder, swords, bayonets, battles, sieges, bombardments, sea-fights, ships sunk with a thousand men, smoke, noise, confusion, flight, pursuit, victory; fields strewed with carcasses left for food to dogs and birds of prey; plundering, burning, and destroying.

I was going on to more particulars, when my master commanded me to be silent. He said whoever understood the

nature of Yahoos might easily believe it possible for so vile an animal to be capable of every action I had named, if their strength and cunning equalled their malice. But although he hated the Yahoos of this country, yet he no more blamed them for their odious qualities than he did a bird of prey for its cruelty, or a sharp stone for cutting his hoof. But when a creature pretending to reason could be capable of such enormities, he dreaded lest the corruption of that faculty might be worse than brutality itself. He seemed, therefore, confident, that, instead of reason, we were only possessed of some quality fitted to increase our natural vices.

He added that he had heard too much upon the subject of war, but there was another point which a little perplexed him. I had informed him that some of our crew left their country on account of being ruined by law; that I had already explained the meaning of the word; but he was at a loss how it should come to pass, that the law, which was intended for every man's preservation, should be any man's ruin.

I assured his honor that law was a science in which I had not much knowledge. However, I would give him all the satisfaction I was able.

I said there was a society of men among us, bred up from their youth in the art of proving, by words multiplied for the purpose, that white is black, and black is white; according as they are paid. To this society all the rest of the people are slaves. For example, if my neighbor has a mind to have my cow, he hires a lawyer to prove that he ought to have my cow from me. I must then hire another to defend my right, it being against all rules of law that any man should be allowed to speak for himself. Now, in this case, I, who am the right owner, am under a great disadvantage: because, my lawyer, being practised almost from his cradle in defending falsehood, is quite out of his element when he would be an advocate for justice.

It is a maxim among lawyers that whatever has been done before may legally be done again; and therefore they take special care to record all the decisions formerly made. These, under the name of precedents, they produce as authorities to justify the most iniquitous opinions.

In pleading they are loud, violent, and tedious. For instance, in the case already mentioned, they desire to know whether the said cow was red or black; her horns long or short; whether the field I graze her in is round or square; whether she was milked at home or abroad; what diseases she is subject to, and the like; after which they consult precedents, adjourn the cause from time to time, and in ten, twenty, or thirty years come to a decision.

It is likewise to be observed that this society has a peculiar cant and jargon of their own that no other mortal can understand, and wherein all their laws are written, which laws they take special care to multiply; whereby they have wholly confounded the very essence of truth and falsehood, of right and wrong.

In the trial of persons accused for crime against the state, the method is much more short and commendable: the judge first sends to sound the disposition of those in power; after which he can easily hang or save a criminal, strictly preserving all due forms of law.

Here my master interposing, said it was a pity that creatures endowed with such prodigious abilities of mind as these lawyers, by the description I gave of them, must certainly be, were not rather encouraged to be instructors of others in wisdom and knowledge.

My master was yet wholly at a loss to understand what motives could incite this race of lawyers to perplex, disquiet, and weary themselves; neither could he comprehend what I meant in saying they did it for hire: whereupon I was at much pains to describe to him the use of money, the materials it was made

of, and the value of the metals ; that when a Yahoo had got a great store of this precious substance he was able to purchase whatever he had a mind to ; the finest clothing, the noblest houses, great tracts of land, the most costly meats and drinks. Therefore, since money alone was able to perform all these feats, our Yahoos thought they could never have enough of it to spend, or to save, as they found themselves inclined ; that the rich men enjoyed the fruit of the poor man's labor, and the latter were a thousand to one in proportion to the former ; that the bulk of our people were forced to live miserably, by laboring every day for small wages, to enable a few to live plentifully.

I enlarged much on these, and many other particulars ; but his honor went upon a supposition that all animals had a title to their share in the productions of the earth, and therefore he desired I would let him know what these costly foods were, and how any of us happened to want them ? Whereupon I enumerated as many sorts as came into my head, for which we had to send vessels by sea to every part of the world, and as well for liquors to drink. I assured him that this whole globe of earth must be at least three times gone round before one of our better female Yahoos could get her breakfast. He said that must needs be a miserable country which cannot furnish food for its own inhabitants. But what he chiefly wondered at was, how such vast tracts of ground as I described should be wholly without fresh water, and the people put to the necessity of sending over the sea for drink. I replied that wine was not imported among us from foreign countries to supply the want of water, but because it was a sort of liquid which made us merry, by putting us out of our senses, diverted all melancholy thoughts, begat wild, extravagant imaginations in the brain, raised our hopes and banished our fears, suspended every office of reason for a time, and deprived us of the use of our limbs, till we fell into a profound sleep ; although it must be confessed that we always awaked sick and dispirited, and that the use of this

liquor filled us with diseases which made our lives uncomfortable and short.

But, beside all this, the bulk of our people supported themselves by furnishing the necessities or conveniences of life to the rich, and to each other. For instance, when I am at home, and dressed as I ought to be, I carry on my body the workmanship of a hundred tradesmen; the building and furniture of my house employ as many more, and five times the number to adorn my wife.

I was going on to tell him of another sort of people, who get their livelihood by attending the sick. But here it was with the utmost difficulty that I brought him to apprehend what I meant. He could easily conceive that a Houyhnhnm grew weak and heavy a few days before his death, or by some accident might hurt a limb; but that nature, who works all things to perfection, should suffer any pains to breed in our bodies he thought impossible, and desired to know the reason of so unaccountable an evil.

I told him we fed on a thousand things which operated contrary to each other; that we ate when we were not hungry, and drank without the provocation of thirst; that we sat whole nights drinking strong liquors, without eating a bit, which disposed us to sloth, inflamed our bodies, and prevented digestion; that it would be endless to give him a catalogue of all diseases incident to human bodies, for they could not be fewer than five or six hundred, spread over every limb and joint; in short, every part, external and intestine, having diseases appropriated to itself: to remedy which there was a sort of people bred up among us in the profession, or the pretence, of curing the sick.

But, besides real diseases, we are subject to many that were only imaginary, for which the physicians have invented imaginary cures; these have their several names, and so have the drugs that are proper for them; and with these our female Yahoos are always infested.

One day, in discourse, my master having heard me mention the nobility of my country, was pleased to make me a compliment which I could not pretend to deserve: That he was sure I must have been born of some noble family, because I far exceeded in shape, color, and cleanliness all the Yahoos of his nation, although I seemed to fail in strength and agility, which must be imputed to my different way of living from those other brutes; and, besides, I was not only endowed with the faculty of speech, but likewise with some rudiments of reason, to a degree that, with all his acquaintance, I passed for a prodigy.

He made me observe that among the Houyhnhnms the white, the sorrel, and the iron-gray were not so exactly shaped as the bay, the dapple-gray, and the black; nor born with equal talents of mind, or a capacity to improve them, and therefore continued always in the condition of servants.

I made his honor my most humble acknowledgments for the good opinion he was pleased to conceive of me, but assured him, at the same time, that my birth was of the lower sort, having been born of plain, honest parents, who were just able to give me a tolerable education; that nobility among us was altogether a different thing from the idea he had of it; that our young noblemen are bred from their childhood in idleness and luxury.

CHAPTER VI

The Author's great Love of his native Country — His Master's observations upon the Constitution and Administration of England, as described by the Author, with Parallel Cases and Comparisons — His Master's observations upon Human Nature.

I HAD not been a year in this country before I contracted such a love and veneration for the inhabitants that I entered on a firm resolution never to return to humankind, but to pass the rest of my life among these admirable Houyhnhnms, in the contemplation and practice of every virtue, where I could have no example or incitement to vice. But it was decreed by fortune, that so great a felicity should not fall to my share. However, it is now some comfort to reflect that in what I said of my countrymen I extenuated their faults as much as I durst before so strict an examiner. For, indeed, who is there alive that will not be swayed by his bias and partiality to the place of his birth?

I have related the substance of several conversations I had with my master during the greatest part of the time I had the honor to be in his service, but have, indeed, for brevity's sake, omitted much more than is here set down.

When I had answered all his questions, and his curiosity seemed to be fully satisfied, he sent for me one morning early, and commanded me to sit down (an honor which he had never before conferred upon me). He said he had been very seriously considering my whole story, as far as it related both to myself and my country; that he looked upon us as a sort of animals,

to whose share, by what accident he could not conjecture, some small pittance of reason had fallen, whereof we made no other use than, by its assistance, to aggravate our natural corruptions; that as to myself it was manifest I had neither the strength nor agility of a common Yahoo; that I walked infirmly on my hinder feet, had found out a contrivance to make my claws of no use or defence, and to remove the hair from my chin, which was intended as a shelter from the sun and the weather; lastly, that I could neither run with speed, nor climb trees like my brethren, as he called them, the Yahoos in his country.

That our institutions of government and law were plainly owing to our gross defects in reason and virtue.

He observed that, as I agreed in every feature of my body with other Yahoos, except where it was to my real disadvantage, in point of strength, speed, and activity; so from the representation I had given him of our lives, our manners, and our actions, he found as near a resemblance in the disposition of our minds. He said that the dissensions of those brutes in his country were owing to the same causes with ours, as I had described them. For if, said he, you throw among five Yahoos as much food as would be sufficient for fifty, they will, instead of eating peaceably, fall together by the ears, each one impatient to have all to itself; and therefore a servant was usually employed to stand by while they were feeding abroad, and those kept at home were tied at a distance from each other; that if a cow died of age or accident, before a Houyhnhnm could secure it for his own Yahoos, those in the neighborhood would come in herds to seize it, and then would ensue such a battle as I had described, with terrible wounds, made by their claws, on both sides, although they seldom were able to kill one another, for want of such convenient instruments of death as we had invented. At other times, battles had been fought between the Yahoos of several neighborhoods, without any visible cause; those of one district watching all opportunities to sur-

prise the next, before they are prepared. But if they find their project hath miscarried, they return home, and for want of enemies engage in what I called a civil war among themselves.

That in some fields of his country there are certain shining stones of several colors, whereof the Yahoos are violently fond ; and when part of these stones is fixed in the earth, as it sometimes happeneth, they will dig with their claws for whole days to get them out ; then carry them away, and hide them by heaps in their kennels ; but still looking round with great caution, for fear their comrades should find out their treasure. My master said he could never discover the reason of this unnatural appetite, or how these stones could be of any use to a Yahoo ; but now he believed it might proceed from the same principle of avarice which I had ascribed to mankind : that he had once, by way of experiment, privately removed a heap of these stones from the place where one of his Yahoos had buried it ; whereupon the sordid animal, missing his treasure, by his loud lamenting brought the whole herd to the place, there miserably howled, then fell to biting and tearing the rest, began to pine away, would neither eat, nor sleep, nor work, till he ordered a servant privately to convey the stones into the same hole, and hide them as before ; which, when his Yahoo had found, he presently recovered his spirits and good-humor, but took care to remove the treasure to a better hiding-place, and hath ever since been a very serviceable brute.

My master further assured me, which I also observed myself, that in the fields where the shining stones abound, the fiercest and most frequent battles are fought, occasioned by perpetual inroads of the neighboring Yahoos.

He said, it was common when two Yahoos discovered such a stone in a field, and were contending which of them should be the proprietor, a third would take the advantage, and carry it away from them both ; which my master would needs contend to have some kind of resemblance with our suits at law.

My master continuing his discourse, said there was nothing that rendered the Yahoos more odious than their undistinguishing appetite to devour everything that came in their way, whether herbs, roots, berries, the corrupted flesh of animals, or all mingled together: and it was peculiar in their temper that they were fonder of what they could get by stealth, at a distance, than much better food provided for them at home. Also, if their prey held out, they would eat till they were ready to burst.

There was a kind of root, very juicy, but somewhat rare and difficult to be found, which the Yahoos sought for with much eagerness, and would suck it with great delight. It produced in them the same effects that wine hath upon us. It would make them sometimes hug, and sometimes tear one another. They would howl, and grin, and chatter, and reel, and tumble, and then fall asleep in the dirt.

I did indeed observe that the Yahoos were the only animals in this country subject to any diseases; which, however, were contracted, not by any ill treatment they meet with, but by the nastiness and greediness of that sordid brute. Neither has their language any more than a general appellation for those maladies which is borrowed from the name of the beast, and called *Hnea-yahoo*, or the Yahoo's-evil.

My master told me there were some qualities remarkable in the Yahoos, which he had not observed me to mention, or at least very slightly, in the accounts I had given him of humankind. One thing he wondered at in the Yahoos was their strange disposition to nastiness and dirt; whereas there appears to be a natural love of cleanliness in all other animals. I could easily have vindicated humankind from the imputation of singularity upon the last article if there had been any swine in that country (as unluckily for me there were not) which although it may be a sweeter quadruped than a Yahoo, cannot I humbly conceive, in justice, pretend to more cleanliness; and

so his honor himself must have owned, if he had seen their filthy way of feeding and their custom of wallowing and sleeping in the mud.

Another quality which his servants had discovered in several Yahoos to him was wholly unaccountable. He said a fancy would sometimes take a Yahoo to retire into a corner, to lie down, and howl and groan, and spurn away all that came near him, although he were young and fat, and wanted neither food nor water; nor could the servants imagine what could possibly ail him. And the only remedy they found was to set him to hard work, after which he would infallibly come to himself. To this I was silent, out of partiality to my own kind; yet here I could plainly discover the true seeds of spleen,^o which seizes on the lazy, the luxurious, and the rich; who, if they were forced to undergo the same regimen, would no doubt be cured.

CHAPTER VII

The Author relates several Particulars of the Yahoos — The great Virtues of the Houyhnhnms — The Education and Exercise of their Youth — Their General Assembly.

As I ought to have understood human nature much better than I supposed it possible for my master to do, so it was easy to apply the character he gave of the Yahoos to myself and my countrymen ; and I believed I could yet make further discoveries from my own observation. I therefore often begged his honor to let me go among the herds of Yahoos in the neighborhood. He always very graciously consented, being perfectly convinced that the hatred I bore those brutes would never suffer me to be corrupted by them ; and his honor ordered one of his servants, a strong sorrel nag, very honest and good-natured, to be my guard. Without such protection I durst not undertake such adventures ; for I have already told the reader how much I was pestered by those odious animals upon my first arrival : and I afterwards failed very narrowly, three or four times, of falling into their clutches, when I happened to stray at any distance without my hanger.

They are prodigiously nimble from their infancy. However, I once caught a young male of three years old, and endeavored, by all marks of tenderness, to make it quiet ; but the little imp fell a-squalling, and scratching, and biting with such violence that I was forced to let it go ; and it was high time ; for a whole troop of old ones came about us at the noise, but finding the cub was safe (for away it ran) and my sorrel nag being by, they durst not venture near us.

By what I could discover the Yahoos appear to be the most unteachable of all animals; their capacities never reaching higher than to draw or carry burdens. Yet I am of opinion this defect ariseth chiefly from a perverse, restive disposition; for they are cunning, malicious, treacherous, and revengeful.

The Houyhnhnms keep the Yahoos needed for present use in huts not far from the house; but the rest are sent abroad to certain fields, where they dig up roots, eat several kinds of herbs, and search about for carrion, or sometimes catch weasels and rats, which they greedily devour. Nature hath taught them to dig deep holes with their nails on the side of a rising ground, wherein they lie by themselves; only the kennels of the females are larger, sufficient to hold two or three cubs.

They swim from their infancy like frogs, and are able to continue long under water, where they often take fish, which the females carry home to their young.

Having lived three years in this country, the reader will expect that I should give him some account of the manners and customs of its inhabitants, which it was indeed my principal study to learn.

As these noble Houyhnhnms are endowed by nature with a general disposition to all virtues, and have no conceptions or ideas of what is evil in a rational creature, so their grand maxim is, to cultivate reason, and to be wholly governed by it.

Friendship and benevolence are the two principal virtues among the Houyhnhnms, and these not confined to particular objects, but universal to the whole race; for a stranger from the remotest part is equally well treated with the nearest neighbor, and wherever he goes, looks upon himself as at home. They preserve decency and civility in the highest degrees, but are altogether ignorant of ceremony. They will have it that nature teaches them to love the whole species, and only maketh a distinction of persons where there is a superior degree of virtue.

In educating the youth of both sexes their method is admirable, and highly deserves our imitation. These are not suffered to taste a grain of oats, except upon certain days, till eighteen years old ; nor milk, but very rarely ; and in summer they graze two hours in the morning, and as long in the evening, which their parents do likewise ; but the servants are not allowed above half that time, and a great part of their grass is brought home, which they eat at the most convenient hours, when they can be best spared from work.

Temperance, industry, exercise, and cleanliness are the lessons equally enjoined to the young ones of both sexes ; and my master thought it monstrous in us to give the females a different kind of education from the males, except in some articles of domestic management.

But the Houyhnhnms train up their youth to strength, speed, and hardiness by exercising them in running races up and down steep hills and over hard and stony grounds ; and when they are all in a sweat they are ordered to leap over head and ears into a pond or a river. Four times a year the youth of each district meet to show their proficiency in running and leaping, and other feats of strength and agility, where the victor is rewarded with a song made in his or her praise. On this festival the servants drive a herd of Yahoos into the field, laden with hay and oats and milk, for a repast for the Houyhnhnms ; after which these brutes are immediately driven back, for fear of being noisome to the assembly.

Every fourth year, at the vernal equinox,^o there is a representative council of the whole nation, which meets in a plain about twenty miles from our house, and continues about five or six days. Here they inquire into the state and condition of the several districts ; whether they abound or be deficient in hay or oats, or cows or Yahoos ; and wherever there is any want (which is but seldom) it is immediately supplied by unanimous consent and contribution.

CHAPTER VIII

A grand debate at the General Assembly of the Houyhnhnms —
The Learning of the Houyhnhnms — Their Buildings — Their
Manner of Burial — The Defectiveness of their Language.

ONE of these grand assemblies was held in my time, about three months before my departure, whither my master went, as the representative of our district. In this council was resumed their old debate, and indeed the only debate that ever happened in that country ; whereof my master, after his return, gave me a very particular account.

The question to be debated was, Whether the Yahoos should be exterminated from the face of the earth ? One of the members for the affirmative offered several arguments of great strength and weight, alleging that as the Yahoos were the most filthy, noisome, and deformed animal which nature ever produced, so they were the most restive and indocible, mischievous and malicious. They would suck the teats of the Houyhnhnms' cows, kill and devour their cats, trample down their oats and grass, if they were not continually watched, and commit a thousand other extravagances. He took notice of a general tradition, that Yahoos had not been always in their country ; but that, many ages ago, two of these brutes appeared together upon a mountain ; whether produced by the heat of the sun upon corrupted mud and slime, or from the ooze or froth of the sea, was never known ; that their brood in a short time grew so numerous as to overrun and infest the whole nation ; that the Houyhnhnms, to get rid of this evil,

made a general hunting, and at last enclosed the whole herd ; and, destroying the old ones, every Houyhnhnm kept two young ones in a kennel, and brought them to such a degree of tameness as an animal so savage by nature can be capable of acquiring ; using them for draught and carriage ; that the inhabitants, taking a fancy to use the service of the Yahoos, had very imprudently neglected to cultivate the breed of asses, which are a comely animal, easily kept, more tame and orderly ; strong enough for labor, although they yield to the other in agility of body ; and if their braying be no agreeable sound, it is far preferable to the horrible howlings of the Yahoos.

My master approved of the tradition mentioned by the honorable member who spoke before, and affirmed that the two Yahoos said to be first seen among them had been driven thither over the sea ; that, coming to land, and being forsaken by their companions, they retired to the mountains, and, degenerating by degrees, became in process of time much more savage than those of their own species in the country whence these two originals came. The reason of this assertion was that he had now in his possession a certain wonderful Yahoo (meaning myself) which most of them had heard of, and many of them had seen. He then related to them how he first found me ; that my body was all covered with an artificial composure of the skins and hairs of other animals ; that I spoke in a language of my own, and had thoroughly learned theirs ; that I had related to him the accidents which brought me thither. He added how I had endeavored to persuade him that in my own and other countries the Yahoos acted as the governing, rational animal, and held the Houyhnhnms in servitude ; that he observed in me all the qualities of a Yahoo, only a little more civilized by some tincture of reason ; which, however, was in a degree as far inferior to the Houyhnhnm race as the Yahoos of their country were to me.

The Houyhnhnms have no letters, and consequently their

knowledge is all traditional ; but, there happening few events of any moment among a people so well united, naturally disposed to every virtue, wholly governed by reason, and cut off from all commerce with other nations, the historical part is easily preserved, without burdening their memory. I have already observed that they are subject to no diseases, and therefore can have no need of physicians. However, they have excellent medicines, composed of herbs, to cure accidental bruises, and cuts in the pastern, or frog of the foot, by sharp stones, as well as other maims and hurts in the several parts of the body.

They calculate the year by the revolutions of the sun and the moon, but use no subdivisions into weeks. They are well enough acquainted with the motions of those two luminaries, and understand the nature of eclipses ; and this is the utmost progress of their astronomy.

In poetry they must be allowed to excel all other mortals, wherein the justness of their similes, and the minuteness, as well as exactness, of their descriptions, are indeed inimitable. Their verses abound very much in both of these, and usually contain either some exalted notions of friendship and benevolence, or the praises of those who were victors in races and other bodily exercises. Their buildings, although very rude and simple, are not inconvenient, but well contrived to defend them from cold and heat. They have a kind of tree, which, at forty years old, loosens in the root, and falls with the first storm. It grows very straight, and being pointed like stakes with a sharp stone (for the Houyhnhnms know not the use of iron) they stick them erect in the ground, about ten inches asunder, and then weave in oat straw, or sometimes slender saplings, betwixt them. The roof is made after the same manner, and so are the doors.

The Houyhnhnms use the hollow part between the pastern and the hoof of their forefeet as we do our hands, and this with

greater dexterity than I could at first imagine. I have seen a white mare of our family thread a needle (which I lent her on purpose) with that joint. They milk their cows, reap their oats, and do all the work which requires hands in the same manner. They have a kind of hard flints, which, by grinding against other stones, they form into instruments that serve instead of wedges, axes, and hammers. With tools made of these flints they likewise cut their hay and reap their oats, which there grow naturally in several fields; the Yahoos draw home the sheaves in carriages, and the servants tread them in certain covered huts, to get out the grain, which is kept in stores. They make a rude kind of earthen and wooden vessels, and bake the former in the sun.

If they can avoid casualties they die only of old age, and are buried in the obscurest places that can be found; their friends and relations expressing neither joy nor grief at their departure; nor does the dying person discover the least regret that he is leaving the world, any more than if he were returning home from a visit to one of his neighbors. I remember my master having once made an appointment with a friend and his family to come to his house upon some affair of importance: on the day fixed the mistress and her two children came very late. She made two excuses; first for her husband, who, as she said, happened that very morning to *lhnuwnh*. The word is strongly expressive in their language, but not easily rendered into English. It signifies to retire to his first mother. Her excuse for not coming sooner was that her husband dying late in the morning, she was a good while consulting her servants about a convenient place where his body should be laid: and I observed she behaved herself at our house as cheerfully as the rest. She died about three months after.

They live generally to seventy or seventy-five years, very seldom to fourscore. Some weeks before their death they feel a gradual decay, but without pain. During this time they are

much visited by their friends, because they cannot go abroad with their usual ease and satisfaction. However, about ten days before their death, which they seldom fail in computing, they return the visits that have been made them by those who are nearest in the neighborhood, being carried in a convenient sledge drawn by Yahoos; a vehicle they use, not only upon this occasion, but when they grow old, on long journeys, or when they are lamed by any accident. When the dying Houyhnhnms return those visits they take a solemn leave of their friends, as if they were going to some remote part of the country, where they designed to pass the rest of their lives.

It may be worth observing, that the Houyhnhnms have no word in their language to express anything that is evil, except what they borrow from the deformities or ill qualities of the Yahoos. Thus they denote the folly of a servant, an omission of a child, a stone that cuts their feet, a continuance of foul or unseasonable weather, and the like, by adding to each the epithet of *Yahoo*. For instance: "*hahn Yahoo, whnaholm Yahoo, ynlnmndwihlma Yahoo*," and an ill-contrived house, "*ynholmhnmrohlnw Yahoo*."

CHAPTER IX

The Author's happy Life among the Houyhnhnms — His great improvement in Virtue by conversing with them — Their Conversations — The Author has notice given him by his Master, that he must depart from the Country — He falls into a swoon for grief, but submits — He contrives and finishes a Canoe by the help of a fellow-servant, and puts to sea at a venture.

By this time I had settled my ways of life to my own heart's content. My master had ordered a room to be made for me, after their manner, about six yards from his house, the sides and floors of which I plastered with clay, and covered with rush-mats of my own contriving. I had beaten hemp, which there grows wild, and made of it a sort of ticking; this I filled with the feathers of several birds I had taken with snares made of Yahoos' hairs. I had worked two chairs with my knife, the sorrel nag helping me. When my clothes were worn to rags, I made myself others with the skins of rabbits, and of a certain beautiful animal about the same size, called *nnuhnoh*, the skin of which is covered with a fine down. Of these I made very tolerable stockings. I soled my shoes with wood, which I cut from a tree, and fitted to the upper-leather; and when the leather was worn out I supplied it with the skins of Yahoos dried in the sun. I often got honey out of hollow trees, which I ate with my bread. No man could more verify the truth of the two maxims that, "Nature is very easily satisfied"; and that, "Necessity is the mother of invention." I enjoyed perfect health of body and tranquillity of mind.

I had the favor of being admitted to several Houyhnhnms, who came to visit or dine with my master ; where his honor graciously suffered me to wait in the room and listen to their discourse. Both he and his company would often ask me questions. I had also sometimes the honor of attending my master in his visits to others. I never presumed to speak, except in answer to a question ; and I was infinitely delighted with the station of a humble auditor in such conversations, where nothing passed but what was useful, expressed in the fewest and most significant words. I may add, without vanity, that my presence often gave them sufficient matter for discourse, because it afforded my master an occasion of letting his friends into the history of me and my country, upon which they were all pleased to descant, in a manner not very advantageous to humankind ; and for that reason I shall not repeat what they said : only I freely confess that I should be prouder to listen to the discourses of my master and his friends than to dictate to the greatest and wisest assembly in Europe. At first I did not feel that natural awe which the Yahoos and all other animals bear toward them ; but it grew upon me by degrees, and was mingled with a respectful love and gratitude, that they would condescend to distinguish me from the rest of my species.

When I thought of my family, my friends, and my countrymen, or the human race in general, I considered them, as they really were, Yahoos, in shape and disposition. When I happened to behold the reflection of my own form in a lake or a fountain I turned away my face in horror and detestation of myself, and could better endure the sight of a common Yahoo than of my own person.

By conversing with the Houyhnhnms, and looking upon them with delight, I fell to imitate their gait and gesture, which is now grown into a habit ; and my friends often tell me in a blunt way that I trot like a horse ; which, however, I take

for a great compliment. Neither shall I disown that in speaking I am apt to fall into the voice and manner of the Houyhnhnms, and hear myself ridiculed on that account, without the least mortification.

In the midst of all this happiness, and when I looked upon myself to be fully settled for life, my master sent for me one morning a little earlier than his usual hour. I observed by his countenance that he was in some perplexity, and at a loss how to begin what he had to speak. After a short silence, he told me he did not know how I would take what he was going to say. That in the last general assembly, when the affair of the Yahoos was entered upon, the representatives had taken offence at his keeping a Yahoo in his family, more like a Houyhnhnm than a brute animal; that he was known frequently to converse with me; that such a practice was not agreeable to reason or nature, nor a thing ever heard of before among them. The assembly did therefore exhort him to command me to swim back to the place whence I came.

My master added that he was daily pressed by the Houyhnhnms of the neighborhood to have the assembly's exhortation executed, which he could not put off much longer. He doubted it would be impossible for me to swim to another country, and therefore wished I would contrive some sort of vehicle, resembling those I had described to him, that might carry me on the sea, in which work I should have the assistance of his own servants, as well as those of his neighbors. He concluded that, for his own part, he could have been content to keep me in his service as long as I lived, because he found I had cured myself of some bad habits and dispositions, by endeavoring, as far as my inferior nature was capable, to imitate the Houyhnhnms.

I should here observe to the reader that a decree of the general assembly in this country is expressed by the word *hnhloayn*, which signifies an exhortation; for they have no conception how a rational creature can be compelled, but only advised or

exhorted ; because no person can disobey reason without giving up his claim to be a rational creature.

I was struck with the utmost grief and despair at my master's discourse ; and being unable to support the agonies I was under, I fell into a swoon at his feet. When I came to myself he told me that he concluded I had been dead (for these people are subject to no such imbecilities of nature). I answered in a faint voice that death would have been a happiness ; that although I could not blame the assembly's exhortation, or the urgency of his friends, yet, in my weak and corrupt judgment, I thought it might consist with reason to have been less rigorous ; that I could not swim a league, and probably the nearest land to theirs might be distant above a hundred ; that many materials necessary for making a small vessel to carry me off were wholly wanting in this country ; which, however, I would attempt, in obedience and gratitude to his honor.

My master, in a few words, made me a very gracious reply ; allowed me the space of two months to finish my boat ; and ordered the sorrel nag, my fellow-servant, to follow my instructions ; because I told my master that his help would be sufficient, and I knew he had a tenderness for me.

In his company my first business was to go to that part of the coast where my rebellious crew had set me on shore. I got upon a height, and looking on every side into the sea, fancied I saw a small island toward the northeast. I took out my pocket-glass, and could then clearly distinguish it about five leagues off, as I computed ; but it appeared to the sorrel nag to be only a blue cloud ; for as he had no conception of any country besides his own, so he could not be expert in distinguishing remote objects at sea.

After I had discovered this island I considered no further, but resolved it should, if possible, be the first place of my banishment, leaving the consequence to fortune.

I returned home, and consulting with the sorrel nag, we went into a copse at some distance, where I with my knife, and he

with a sharp flint, fastened to a wooden handle, cut down several oak saplings, about the thickness of a walking-staff, and some larger pieces. But I shall not trouble the reader with a particular description of my own mechanics. Let it suffice to say, that in six weeks' time, with the help of the sorrel nag, who performed the parts that required most labor, I finished a sort of Indian canoe, but much larger, covering it with the skins of Yahoos, well stitched together with hempen threads of my own making. My sail was likewise composed of the skins of the same animal; but I made use of the skins of the youngest I could get, the older being too tough and thick; and I likewise provided myself with four paddles. I laid in a stock of boiled flesh of rabbits and fowls, and took with me two vessels, one filled with milk, and the other with water.

I tried my canoe in a large pond near my master's house, and then corrected in it what was amiss, stopping all the chinks with Yahoo's tallow, till I found it stanch, and able to bear me and my freight; and when it was as complete as I could possibly make it, I had it drawn on a carriage very gently by Yahoos to the seaside, under the conduct of the sorrel nag and another servant.

When all was ready, and the day came for my departure, I took leave of my master and lady, and the whole family, my eyes flowing with tears, and my heart quite sunk with grief. But his honor, out of curiosity, and perhaps partly out of kindness, was determined to see me in my canoe, and got several of his neighboring friends to accompany him. I was forced to wait above an hour for the tide; and then observing the wind very fortunately bearing toward the island to which I intended to steer my course, I took a second leave of my master; but as I was going to prostrate myself to kiss his hoof, he did me the honor to raise it gently to my mouth.

I paid my respects to the rest of the Houyhnhnms, in his honor's company, then getting into my canoe I pushed off from shore.

CHAPTER X

The Author's dangerous Voyage—He arrives at New Holland — Is wounded with an arrow by one of the Natives — Is seized, and carried by force into a Portuguese ship — The great civilities of the Captain — The Author arrives in England.

I BEGAN this desperate voyage on February 15, 1715, at nine o'clock in the morning. The wind was very favorable; however, I made use at first only of my paddles; but considering I should soon be weary, and that the wind might chop about, I ventured to set up my little sail, and thus, with the help of the tide, I went at the rate of a league and a half an hour, as near as I could guess. My master and his friends continued on the shore till I was almost out of sight; and I often heard the sorrel nag (who always loved me) crying out "*Hnuy illa nyha, majah Yahoo; Take care of thyself, gentle Yahoo.*"

My design was, if possible, to discover some small island uninhabited, yet sufficient, by my labor, to furnish me with the necessaries of life; so horrible was the idea I conceived of returning to live in the society, and under the government of Yahoos. For in such a solitude as I desired, I could at least enjoy my own thoughts, and reflect with delight on the virtues of those inimitable Houyhnhnms, without any opportunity of degenerating into the vices and corruptions of my own species.

The reader may remember what I related when my crew conspired against me, and confined me to my cabin, how I continued there several weeks, without knowing what course we took; and when I was put ashore in the long-boat, how the

sailors told me, with oaths, that they knew not in what part of the world we were. However, I did then believe us to be about ten degrees southward of the Cape of Good Hope, as I gathered from some general words I overheard among them, being, I supposed, to the southeast in their intended voyage to Madagascar. And although this were but little better than conjecture, yet I resolved to steer my course eastward, hoping to reach the coast of New Holland, and perhaps some such island as I desired, lying westward of it. The wind was full west; and by six in the evening I computed I had gone eastward at least eighteen leagues, when I spied a very small island about half a league off, which I soon reached. It was nothing but a rock with one creek naturally arched by the force of tempests. Here I put in my canoe, and climbing a part of the rock, I could plainly discover land to the east, extending from south to north. I lay all night in my canoe, and repeating my voyage early in the morning, I arrived in seven hours to the southeast point of New Holland.^o

I saw no inhabitants in the place where I landed, and being unarmed I was afraid of venturing far into the country. I found some shellfish on the shore, and ate them raw, not daring to kindle a fire for fear of being discovered by the natives. I continued three days feeding on oysters and limpets to save my own provisions; and I fortunately found a brook of excellent water, which gave me great relief.

On the fourth day, venturing out early, a little too far, I saw twenty or thirty natives upon a height, not above five hundred yards from me. They were round a fire, as I could discover by the smoke. One of them spied me, and gave notice to the rest; and five of them advanced toward me. I made what haste I could to the shore, and getting into my canoe, shoved off. The savages observing me retreat, ran after me, and before I could get far enough away, discharged an arrow, which wounded me deeply on the inside of my left knee; I shall carry

the mark to my grave. I apprehended the arrow might be poisoned : and paddling out of the reach of their darts (being a calm day) I made a shift to suck the wound, and dressed it as well as I could.

I was at a loss what to do ; for I durst not return to the same landing-place, but stood to the north, and was forced to paddle ; for the wind, though very gentle, was against me, blowing from the northwest. As I was looking about for a secure landing-place, I saw a sail, which appearing every minute more visible, I was in some doubt whether I should wait for it or no ; but at last my detestation of the Yahoo race prevailed, and, turning my canoe, I sailed and paddled together to the south, and got into the same creek whence I set out in the morning, choosing rather to trust myself among the barbarians than live with European Yahoos. I drew up my canoe as close as I could to the shore, and hid myself behind a stone by the little brook, which, as I have already said, was excellent water.

The ship came within half a league of this creek, and sent out her long-boat with vessels to take in fresh water (for the place, it seems, was very well known) ; but I did not observe it till the boat was almost on shore, and it was too late to seek another hiding-place. The seamen, at their landing, observed my canoe, and, rummaging it all over, easily conjectured that the owner could not be far off. Four of them, well armed, searched every cranny and lurking-hole, till at last they found me, flat on my face, behind the stone. They gazed awhile in wonder at my strange, uncouth dress : my coat made of skins, my wooden-soled shoes, and my furred stockings. One of the seamen, in Portuguese, bid me rise, and asked who I was. I understood that language very well, and, getting upon my feet, said I was a poor Yahoo, banished from the Houyhnhnms, and desired they would please to let me depart. They were astonished to hear me answer them in their own tongue and saw by my

complexion I must be a European ; but were at a loss to know what I meant by Yahoos and Houyhnhnms ; and at the same time fell a-laughing at my strange tone in speaking, which resembled the neighing of a horse. I trembled all the while betwixt fear and hatred. I again desired leave to depart, and was gently moving to my canoe ; but they laid hold of me, desiring to know what country I was of ? whence I came ? with many other questions. I told them I was born in England, whence I came about five years ago, and then their country and ours were at peace. I therefore hoped they would not treat me as an enemy, since I meant them no harm, but was a poor Yahoo, seeking some desolate place where to pass the remainder of his unfortunate life.

When they began to talk I thought I never heard anything so unnatural ; for it appeared to me as monstrous as if a dog or cow should speak in England, or a Yahoo in Houyhnhnmland. The honest Portuguese were equally amazed at my strange dress, and the odd manner of delivering my words, which, however, they understood very well. They spoke to me with great humanity, and said they were sure their captain would carry me *gratis* to Lisbon, whence I might return to my own country ; that two of the seamen would go back to the ship, inform the captain of what they had seen, and receive his orders. In the meantime, unless I would give my solemn oath not to fly, they would secure me by force. I thought it best to comply with their proposal. They were very curious to know my story, but I gave them little satisfaction, and they all conjectured that my misfortunes had impaired my reason. In two hours the boat, which went laden with vessels of water, returned with the captain's command to fetch me on board. I fell on my knees to beg my liberty, but all was in vain ; and the men, having tied me with cords, heaved me into the boat, whence I was taken into the ship, and thence into the captain's cabin.

His name was Pedro de Mendez ; and he was a very courteous and generous person. He entreated me to give some account of myself, and desired to know what I would eat or drink ; said I should be used as well as himself ; and spoke so many obliging things that I wondered to find such civilities from a Yahoo. However, I remained silent and sullen. I was ready to faint at the very smell of him and his men. At last I desired something to eat out of my own canoe ; but he ordered me a chicken, and some excellent wine, and then directed that I should be put to bed in a very clean cabin. I would not undress myself, but lay on the bedclothes, and in half an hour stole out, when I thought the crew was at dinner, and, getting to the side of the ship, was going to leap into the sea, and swim for my life rather than continue among Yahoos. But one of the seamen prevented me, and, having informed the captain, I was chained in my cabin.

After dinner Don Pedro came to me, and desired to know my reason for so desperate an attempt ; assured me he only meant to do me all the service he was able ; and spoke so very movingly that at last I condescended to treat him like an animal that had some little portion of reason. I gave him a very short relation of my voyage ; of the conspiracy against me by my own men ; of the country where they set me on shore, and of my five years' residence there. All which he looked upon as if it were a dream or a vision ; whereat I took great offence : for I had quite forgot the faculty of lying, so peculiar to Yahoos in all countries where they preside, and consequently the disposition of suspecting truth in others of their own species. I asked him whether it were the custom in his country to say the thing that was not ? I assured him that if I had lived a thousand years in Houyhnhnm-land I should never have heard a lie from the meanest servant ; that I was altogether indifferent whether he believed me or no ; but, however, in return for his favors, I would give so much allowance to the corruption of his nature

as to answer any objection he would please to make, and then he might easily discover the truth.

The captain, a wise man, after many endeavors to catch me tripping in some part of my story, at last began to have a better opinion of my veracity. But he added, that since I professed so inviolable an attachment to truth, I must give him my word of honor to bear him company in this voyage, without attempting anything against my life; or else he would continue me a prisoner till we arrived at Lisbon. I gave him the promise he required; but at the same time protested that I would suffer the greatest hardships rather than return to live among Yahoos.

Our voyage passed without any considerable accident. In gratitude to the captain, I sometimes sat with him at his earnest request, and strove to conceal my antipathy to humankind, although it often broke forth; which he suffered to pass without observation. But the greatest part of the day I confined myself to my cabin, to avoid seeing any of the crew. The captain had often entreated me to strip myself of my savage dress, and offered to lend me the best suit of clothes he had. This I would not be prevailed on to accept, abhorring to cover myself with anything that had been on the back of a Yahoo. I only desired he would lend me two clean shirts, which, having been washed since he wore them, I believed would not so much defile me. These I changed every second day, and washed them myself.

We arrived at Lisbon, November 5, 1715. At our landing the captain forced me to cover myself with his cloak, to prevent the rabble from crowding about me. I was conveyed to his own house; and I conjured him to conceal from all persons what I had told him of the Houyhnhnms; because the least hint of such a story would draw numbers of people to see me. The captain persuaded me to accept a suit of clothes newly made; but I would not suffer the tailor to take my measure. However, Don Pedro being almost of my size, they fitted me

well enough. He accoutred me with other necessities, all new, which I aired for twenty-four hours, before I would use them.

The captain had no wife, nor above three servants, none of which were suffered to attend at meals; and his whole deportment was so obliging, added to a very good human understanding, that I really began to tolerate his company. He gained so far upon me that I ventured to look out of the back window. By degrees I was brought into another room, whence I peeped into the street, but drew my head back in a fright. In a week's time I found my terror gradually lessened, but my hatred and contempt seemed to increase. I was at last bold enough to walk the street in his company, but kept my nose well stopped with rue, or sometimes with tobacco.

In ten days Don Pedro, to whom I had given some account of my domestic affairs, put it upon me, as a matter of honor and conscience, that I ought to return to my native country, and live at home with my wife and children. He told me there was an English ship in the port just ready to sail, and he would furnish me with all things necessary. It would be tedious to repeat his arguments, and my contradictions. He said it was altogether impossible to find such a solitary island as I had desired to live in; but I might command in my own house, and pass my time as recluse as I pleased.

I complied at last, finding I could not do better. I left Lisbon the 24th day of November, in an English merchantman, but who was the master I never inquired. Don Pedro accompanied me to the ship, and lent me twenty pounds. He took kind leave of me, and embraced me at parting, which I bore as well as I could. During this last voyage I pretended I was sick, and kept close in my cabin. On the 5th of December, 1715, we cast anchor in the Downs about nine in the morning, and at three in the afternoon I got safe to my house at Redriff.

My wife and family received me with great surprise and joy, because they concluded me certainly dead; but I must freely

confess the sight of them filled me only with disgust and contempt ; and the more, by reflecting on the near alliance I had to them. For although, since my unfortunate exile from the Houyhnhnm country, I had compelled myself to tolerate the sight of Yahoos, and to converse with Don Pedro de Mendez, yet my memory and imagination were perpetually filled with the virtues and ideas of those exalted Houyhnhnms.

As soon as I entered the house my wife took me in her arms and kissed me ; at which, having not been used to the touch of that odious animal for so many years, I fell into a swoon for almost an hour. At the time I am writing, it is five years since my last return to England. During the first year I could not endure my wife or children in my presence. The very smell of them was intolerable. Much less could I suffer them to eat in the same room. To this hour they dare not presume to touch my bread, or drink out of the same cup ; neither was I ever able to let one of them take me by the hand. The first money I laid out was to buy two young horses, which I kept in a good stable ; and, next to them, the groom is my greatest favorite ; for I feel my spirits revived by the smell he contracts in the stable. My horses understand me tolerably well ; and I converse with them at least four hours every day. They are strangers to bridle or saddle ; and they live in great amity with me, and friendship to each other.

CHAPTER XI

The Author's Veracity— His Censure of those Travellers who swerve from the Truth — The Author clears himself from any sinister ends in writing — The method of planting Colonies — The right of the Crown to those Countries described by the Author — The Difficulty of conquering them — The Author takes his last leave of the Reader — Proposeth his Manner of Living for the future — Gives good Advice, and concludes.

THUS, gentle reader, I have given thee a faithful history of my travels for more than sixteen years ; wherein I have not been so studious of ornament as of truth ; because my principal design was to inform, and not to amuse thee.

A traveller's chief aim should be to make men wiser and better, and to improve their minds by the example, of what they deliver concerning foreign places.

I could heartily wish a law was enacted that every traveller, before he were permitted to publish his voyages, should be obliged to make oath before the Lord High Chancellor, that all he intended to print was absolutely true to the best of his knowledge ; for then the world would no longer be deceived. It hath given me a great disgust against this part of reading, and some indignation, to see the credulity of mankind so impudently abused. Therefore, since my acquaintance were pleased to think my poor endeavors might not be unacceptable to my country, I imposed on myself, as a maxim never to be swerved from, that I would strictly adhere to truth ; neither indeed can I be ever under the least temptation to vary from it, while I retain in my mind the lectures and example of my noble master

and the other illustrious Houyhnhnms, of whom I had so long the honor to be an humble hearer.

I know very well how little reputation is to be got by writings, which require neither genius nor learning, nor indeed any other talent, except a good memory, or an exact journal. I know likewise that writers of travels are sunk into oblivion by those who come last. And it is highly probable that such travellers, who shall hereafter visit the countries described in this work of mine, may, by adding many new discoveries of their own, jostle me out of vogue, and stand in my place, making the world forget that ever I was an author. This indeed would be too great a mortification if I wrote for fame; but as my sole intention was the public good, I cannot be altogether disappointed.

I confess it was whispered to me that I was bound in duty, as a subject of England, to have given in a memorial to a secretary of state at my first coming; because whatever lands are discovered by a subject belong to the crown. But I doubt whether our conquests in the countries I treat of would be as easy as those of Ferdinando Cortez over the Americans. The Lilliputians, I think, are hardly worth the charge of a fleet and army to reduce them; and I question whether it might be prudent to attempt the Brobdingnagians; or whether an English army would be much at their ease with the Flying Island over their heads. The Houyhnhnms indeed appear not to be so well prepared for war, a science to which they are perfect strangers, and especially against missive weapons. However, supposing myself to be a minister of state, I could never give my advice for invading them. Their prudence, unanimity, unacquaintedness with fear, and their love of their country, would amply supply all defects in the military art. Imagine twenty thousand of them breaking into the midst of an European army, confounding the ranks, overturning the carriages, battering the warrior's faces into mummy by terrible yerks from their hinder

hoofs. But, instead of proposals for conquering that magnanimous nation, I rather wish they were in a capacity, or disposition, to send a sufficient number of their inhabitants for civilizing Europe, by teaching us honor, justice, truth, temperance, public spirit, fortitude, friendship, benevolence, and fidelity.

I had another reason, which made me less forward to enlarge his majesty's dominions by my discoveries. To say the truth I had conceived a few scruples with relation to the justice of princes upon those occasions. For instance a crew of pirates are driven by a storm they know not whither ; at length a boy discovers land from the topmast ; they go on shore to rob and plunder ; they see a harmless people ; are entertained with kindness ; they give the country a new name ; they take formal possession of it for their king ; they set up a rotten plank, or a stone, for a memorial ; they murder two or three dozen of the natives, bring away a couple more by force, for a sample ; return home and get their pardon. Here commences a new dominion acquired by divine right. Ships are sent with the first opportunity ; the natives driven out or destroyed ; their princes tortured to discover their gold ; a free license given to all acts of inhumanity and lust, the earth reeking with the blood of its inhabitants ; and this execrable crew of butchers, employed in so pious an expedition, is a modern colony, sent to convert and civilize an idolatrous and barbarous people° !

But as those countries, which I have described, do not appear to have a desire of being conquered and enslaved, murdered or driven out by colonies ; nor abound either in gold, silver, sugar, or tobacco, I did humbly conceive they were by no means proper objects of our zeal, our valor, or our interest. However, if those whom it more concerns think fit to be of another opinion, I am ready to depose, that no European did ever visit those countries before me, if the inhabitants are to be believed, unless a dispute may arise concerning the two Yahoos, said to have been seen many ages ago upon a mountain in Houyhnhnm-land.

But, as to the formality of taking possession in my sovereign's name, it never came once into my thoughts ; and if it had, yet, as my affairs then stood, I should perhaps, in point of prudence and self-preservation, have put it off to a better opportunity.

Having thus answered the only objection that can ever be raised against me as a traveller, I here take a final leave of all my courteous readers, and return to enjoy my own speculations in my little garden at Redriff ; to apply those excellent lessons of virtue which I learned among the Houyhnhnms ; to instruct the Yahoos of my own family, as far as I shall find them docible animals ; to behold my figure often in a glass, and thus, if possible, habituate myself in time to tolerate the sight of a human creature ; to lament the brutality of Houyhnhnms in my own country, but always treat their persons with respect, for the sake of my noble master, his family, his friends, and the whole Houyhnhnm race, whom these of ours have the honor to resemble in all their lineaments, however their intellect came to degenerate.

I began last week to permit my wife to sit at dinner with me, at the furthest end of a long table ; and to answer (but with the utmost brevity) the few questions I asked her. Yet the smell of a Yahoo continuing very offensive, I always keep my nose well stopped with rue, lavender, or tobacco leaves. And although it be hard for a man late in life to remove old habits, I am not altogether out of hopes, some time, to suffer a neighbor Yahoo in my company without the apprehensions I am yet under of his teeth or his claws.

My reconciliation to the Yahoo kind in general might not be so difficult if they would be content with those vices and follies only which nature hath entitled them to. I am not in the least provoked at the sight of a lawyer, a pickpocket, a colonel, a fool, a lord, a gamester, a politician, or the like ; but when I behold a lump of deformity and diseases, both in body and

mind, smitten with pride, it immediately breaks all the measures of my patience.

The Houyhnhnms, who live under the government of reason, are no more proud of the good qualities they possess than I should be for not wanting a leg or an arm ; which no man in his wits would boast of, although he must be miserable without them. I dwell the longer upon this subject from the desire I have to make the society of an English Yahoo by any means not insupportable ; and therefore I here entreat those who have any tincture of this absurd vice that they will not presume to come in my sight.

NOTES



1. Lilliputia, as described in the book, would be in Southern Australia.
2. This was about where Gulliver came to land in Brobdingnag.
3. The kingdom of which Laputa was a part was located just south of the Aleutian Islands.
4. The country of the Houyhnhnms was off the south coast of Australia, near Tasmania.

Page 1. Belief in the existence of a **nation of pigmies** was very common in ancient times. Such a race is mentioned by Herodotus, Aristotle, and Pliny, and pigmies have been referred to and described with more or less definiteness in books of travel down to comparatively recent times. A good instance of what was affirmed with regard to them is furnished by the Greek author Ctesias, who lived in the fifth century before Christ. He says there was a black tribe in middle India, the members of which rarely exceeded a height of two feet and a half; that they had long hair on their heads which fell down their backs to their knees, and a beard that

came down in front to their feet. After hair and beard were grown there was slight need for clothing, and they simply arranged this abundant hair of beard and head so that it lay thick all about the body, and then fastened a belt around the waist to keep the hair in place.

The Lilliputians, however, were very much smaller than any race which was believed to really exist by the old writers, for they were only one-twelfth the height of ordinary human beings. The nearest genuine approach to their size is to be found in the pigmy tribes of Central Africa. These little people attain a height of from three to four and one-half feet, and a weight of about ninety pounds. They are brown in color, have shapely bodies, small feet and hands, and woolly hair. They are expert hunters and kill their game with poisoned arrows. Several other pigmy tribes, nearly as diminutive, are inhabitants of the Malay peninsula and of some of the neighboring islands, including the Philippines.

Page 1. The famous university at **Leyden** in Holland was resorted to for the study of medicine by many persons from England in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries.

Page 2. The **Levant** is the eastern portion of the Mediterranean and its coasts. Most of this coast-line is a part of either Turkey or Egypt.

Page 2. The **South Seas** is a name formerly used for the southern portion of the Pacific Ocean.

Page 2. **Van Diemen's Land** is now called Tasmania. Explorers first began to investigate this part of the world early in the seventeenth century, but until after Swift's time very little was known about its geography. Indeed, the general outlines of Australia were not determined until Captain Cook explored most of the coast in 1770. Swift places Lilliput northwest of Tasmania, in latitude $30^{\circ} 2' S.$, which would be somewhere in southern Australia.

Page 12. By **chairs** is meant sedans or sedan chairs. A sedan

was a portable chair, or a covered vehicle containing a seat for a single person. It was usually borne on poles by two men, and served the purpose of a cab.

Page 12. The lives of the Lilliputians were considerably shorter than ours, and the monarch's years were equivalent to forty of ours, as the author shows by a comparison of ages a few pages farther on.

Page 13. **Pike**: an old-time weapon consisting of a long wooden shaft with a pointed steel head.

Page 15. **Fobs**: small pockets in the front of a man's trousers.

Page 19. **Perspective**: an old name for a telescope.

Page 21. A **summerset** or **summersault**, as performed by an acrobat, consists of springing up and turning heels over head in the air and coming down on the feet.

Page 53. **Cabal**: a secret association of a few designing persons who are intriguing to promote their private views and interests in church or state.

Page 56. Not far north of Tasmania, or **Van Diemen's Land**, is the eastern portion of Australia, but there are no islands to the northeast.

Page 57. The **Downs**: an anchorage on the English coast a little to the north of Dover.

Page 57. **Greenwich** is on the southern bank of the Thames, about five miles east of London Bridge.

Page 57. **Redriff** is a section of London now called Rotherhithe, a mile or two east of the centre of the city.

Page 58. **Surat** was at one time the chief commercial city of India. It is 160 miles north of Bombay.

Page 61. The **Straits of Madagascar** are now called the Mozambique Channel.

Page 61. The **Molucca Islands**, now known as the Spice Islands, are halfway between Australia and the Philippines. It would hardly be possible for a vessel to be driven over the course Swift

describes without encountering Sumatra, Borneo, or some of the other islands that lie to the west of the Spice Islands.

Page 62. The **monsoons** are winds of the Indian Ocean and Eastern seas that blow from the southwest for half the year, and in the opposite direction for the other half. Judging from what Swift says of the course of the vessel after it left the region of the Moluccas, it must have gone about two thousand miles in the direction of the Sandwich Islands before it came to the shores of Brobdingnag.

Page 62. **Great Tartary** included Mongolia and Manchuria, and extended in a broad strip westerly from them clear across Asia into the borders of Europe.

Page 63. That a race of giants existed was long believed, not only by the ignorant, but by men of learning. There is a legend that Adam, when created, was so tall his head reached the heavens. This so annoyed the angels that they remonstrated with the Creator, and God placed his hand on Adam's head and he instantly shrank to a height of fifteen hundred feet. After Adam and Eve ate the forbidden fruit, the Garden of Eden was disjoined from the rest of the world by the interposition of the ocean, but Adam and his wife waded through the depths to their new habitation without fear of drowning.

According to this legend, giants flourished down to the time of Noah's flood, but they were all drowned then except Og, king of Bashan, who far outranked in stature all his contemporaries, and the waters of the deluge only reached to his knees. Og was alive at the time the Israelites fled from Egypt, and when he saw them advancing toward his country, he decided to destroy them. The Israelite army covered a space of nine miles, and Og cut a stone out of a mountain large enough to cover the whole army. He put it on his head, intending to carry it and throw it on the host of Israelites and crush them. But God sent a bird which picked a hole through the stone so that it slipped over the giant's head and

hung around his neck. The weight bore him to the ground, and Moses, who was himself fifteen feet in height, attacked Og and cut off his head.

A belief in the existence of whole nations of giants has been held until recently, when the almost complete exploration of the globe has pretty effectually dispelled the idea. The ancients supposed that giants possessed the interior of Africa. After America was discovered, it was easy for the imaginative to find in these new regions wild men of marvellous stature. Thus, in 1614, an early American explorer says of a certain tribe of Virginia Indians that they "are a giantly people, strange in proportion, behavior, and attire, their voice sounding from them as out of a cave, their tobacco pipes, three-quarters of a yard long, sufficient to beat out the braines of a horse (and how many asses' braines are beat out, or rather men's braines smoked out and asses' braines haled in, by our lesse pipes at home?). The calf of one of their legs was measured three-quarters of a yard about, the rest of his limbs proportionable."

The exaggerated accounts of the size of the Patagonians published by Magellan and others had not been refuted in Swift's time; and as late as 1764 Commodore Byron declared their stature filled him with amazement. Hence Brobdingnag did not seem so extravagant a fiction when it appeared as it does now.

Page 66. **Pistole**: a gold coin equal to about \$4.

Page 70. **Hanger**: a short, broad sword formerly carried.

Page 73. **Pillion**: a pad or cushion for a woman to sit on and ride behind a man on horseback.

Page 73. **Crier**: a man who gives public notice in the streets by loud proclamation.

Page 75. **Leading string**: a string tied about a child beneath its arms when it is just beginning to walk, the other end of the string being held by some older person to prevent the child from falling.

Page 76. **Sanson's Atlas**: a very large atlas that was in use in Swift's time.

Page 78. **Moidore** : a gold coin equal to about \$6.50.

Page 79. **Cabinet** : a private room for writing in and for consultations.

Page 80. **Lusus naturæ** : a natural curiosity.

Page 90. The inhabitants of Brobdingnag are represented to be twelve times as tall as ordinary human beings, and all their belongings were of corresponding size. Therefore, as the spire of Salisbury Cathedral is 404 feet high, a proportionate height for the tower mentioned would have been 4800 feet.

Page 91. The cupola or dome of **St. Paul's Cathedral** in London is one hundred feet wide.

Page 97. Monkeys have cheek-pouches in which they can carry food till they are ready to chew it.

Page 101. **Spinnet** : an early form of the piano.

Page 121. **Latitude 44, longitude 143** would be near the northern end of Japan. This is a long distance from where Gulliver landed, but the various journeyings mentioned in the story of his experiences in Brobdingnag might easily have taken him that far.

Page 122. **New Holland** was the former name of Australia, and was not dropped from use until the middle of the nineteenth century.

Page 129. **Latitude 46, longitude 183** would be not very far south of the westernmost of the Aleutian Islands in the northern Pacific.

Page 133. The **harpsichord**, like the spinet, was an early form of the piano.

Page 137. **Judicial astrology** is the superstitious art of foretelling the fate and acts of nations and individuals by study of the positions and motions of the sun, moon, and planets.

Page 138. The dread of comets continued, even among the learned, to a very late period. It is now generally known that the density of these bodies is very small, and that a stroke from one of them would not produce much mischief.

Page 139. The word **adamant** is commonly used to describe a metallic or other excessively hard substance.

Page 150. In 1710, which was shortly before *Gulliver's Travels* was written, an ingenious Frenchman succeeded in weaving stockings and gloves from spiders' threads. Various fabrics have been made since then from the same material, but with no success commercially.

Page 150. **Founder** is a lameness in the foot of a horse caused by inflammation.

Page 153. **Cephalic** : affecting the head or the brain.

Page 155. The **Isle of Wight** is about twenty miles long and ten broad.

Page 157. At the **battle of Arbela** the Persian empire was overthrown, 331 B.C.

Page 157. It is a common, though improbable, tradition that Homer was blind.

Page 175. **Buccaneers** : a term especially applied to the piratical adventurers who preyed on the Spanish commerce in America in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries.

Page 176. **Madagascar** was a great haunt of pirates.

Page 197. The **Prince of Orange** was King William III. The war with France, begun in his reign and continued by his successor, Queen Anne, lasted with short intermissions for nearly three-fourths of a century.

Page 208. By **spleen** is meant dulness or peevishness without sufficient cause.

Page 211. The **vernal equinox** is the time when the sun, moving northward, crosses the equator. The date is about March 21.

Page 223. Gulliver reached New Holland or Australia after a boat journey of not much more than one hundred miles. Evidently, therefore, the country of the Houyhnhnms was a little northwest of Tasmania.

Page 232. This description of the manner in which European colonies have been founded is in many respects a truthful picture, and is particularly applicable to the Spanish settlements in America.

MACMILLAN'S
POCKET SERIES OF ENGLISH
CLASSICS

UNIFORM IN SIZE AND BINDING

Cloth - - - - - 25 Cents Each

B. A. Heydrick, State Normal School, Millersville, Pa.

"I know of no edition that can compare with yours in attractiveness and cheapness. So far as I have examined it the editor's work has been judiciously performed. But well-edited texts are easy to find: you have done something new in giving us a beautiful book, one that will teach pupils to love and care for books; and, which seems to me quite as important, you have made an edition which does not look 'school-bookish.'"

Oscar D. Robinson, Principal High School, Albany, N.Y.

"The books possess all the excellencies claimed for them,—scholarly annotation, convenience of form, beautiful open pages, attractive binding, and remarkably low price. I shall take pleasure in recommending them for use in our school."

S. H. Bundell, Principal Girls' High School, Lancaster, Pa.

"The publishers may justly be proud of the clear type, convenient size, and beautiful binding of the book."

George McK. Bain, Principal High School, Norfolk, Va.

"Handsomer volumes for school use I have never seen. They are well edited, clearly printed, and beautifully bound, while the price is remarkably low."

Professor Charles M. Curry, Indiana State Normal School.

"You have hit upon a splendid form for this series, and the price will certainly attract the attention of any one who has been looking for good material at a 'good' price."

C. N. Kendall, Superintendent of Schools, Indianapolis.

"The form in which you send out these little volumes is very attractive."

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

66 FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK

ENGLISH CLASSICS

- Addison's Sir Roger de Coverley.** Edited by ZELMA GRAY, East Side High School, Saginaw, Mich.
- Browning's Shorter Poems.** Edited by FRANKLIN T. BAKER, Teachers College, New York City.
- Mrs. Browning's Poems (Selections from).** Edited by HELOISE E. HERSHEY.
- Burke's Speech on Conciliation.** Edited by S. C. NEWSOM, Manual Training High School, Indianapolis, Ind.
- Byron's Childe Harold.** Edited by A. J. GEORGE, High School, Newton, Mass.
- Byron's Shorter Poems.** Edited by RALPH HARTT BOWLES, Instructor in English in The Phillips Exeter Academy, Exeter, N. H.
- Carlyle's Essay on Burns, with Selections.** Edited by WILLARD C. GORE, Armour Institute, Chicago, Ill.
- Chaucer's Prologue to the Book of the Tales of Canterbury, the Knight's Tale, and the Nun's Priest's Tale.** Edited by ANDREW INGRAHAM, Late Headmaster of the Swain Free School, New Bedford, Mass.
- Coleridge's The Ancient Mariner.** Edited by T. F. HUNTINGTON, Leland Stanford Junior University.
- Cooper's Last of the Mohicans.** Edited by W. K. WICKES, Principal of the High School, Syracuse, N.Y.
- Cooper's The Deerslayer.**
- De Quincey's Confessions of an English Opium Eater.** Edited by ARTHUR BEATTY, University of Wisconsin.
- Dryden's Palamon and Arcite.** Edited by PERCIVAL CHUBB, Vice-Principal Ethical Culture Schools, New York City.
- Early American Orations, 1760-1824.** Edited by LOUIE R. HELLER, Instructor in English in the De Witt Clinton High School, New York City.
- Epoch-making Papers in United States History.** Edited by M. S. BROWN, New York University.
- Franklin's Autobiography.**
- George Eliot's Silas Marner.** Edited by E. L. GULICK, Lawrenceville School, Lawrenceville, N.J.
- Goldsmith's Vicar of Wakefield.** Edited by H. W. BOYNTON, Phillips Academy, Andover, Mass.
- Hawthorne's Twice-Told Tales.** Edited by R. C. GASTON, Richmond Hill High School, Borough of Queens, New York City.
- Irving's Alhambra.** Edited by ALFRED M. HITCHCOCK, Public High School, Hartford, Conn.

ENGLISH CLASSICS

- Irving's Life of Goldsmith.** Edited by GILBERT SYKES BLAKELY, Teacher of English in the Morris High School, New York City.
- Irving's Sketch Book.**
- Jonathan Edwards' Sermons (Selections from).** Edited by Professor H. N. GARDINER, of Smith College.
- Longfellow's Evangeline.** Edited by LEWIS B. SEMPLE, Commercial High School, Brooklyn, N.Y.
- Lowell's Vision of Sir Launfal.** Edited by HERBERT E. BATES, Manual Training High School, Brooklyn, N.Y.
- Macaulay's Essay on Addison.** Edited by C. W. FRENCH, Principal of Hyde Park High School, Chicago, Ill.
- Macaulay's Essay on Clive.** Edited by J. W. PEARCE, Assistant Professor of English in Tulane University.
- Macaulay's Essay on Johnson.** Edited by WILLIAM SCHUYLER, Assistant Principal of the St. Louis High School.
- Macaulay's Essay on Milton.** Edited by C. W. FRENCH.
- Macaulay's Essay on Warren Hastings.** Edited by Mrs. M. J. FRICK, Los Angeles, Cal.
- Milton's Comus, Lycidas, and Other Poems.** Edited by ANDREW J. GEORGE.
- Milton's Paradise Lost.** Books I and II. Edited by W. I. CRANE, Steele High School, Dayton, O.
- Palgrave's Golden Treasury of Songs and Lyrics.**
- Plutarch's Lives of Cæsar, Brutus, and Antony.** Edited by MARTHA BRIER, Teacher of English in the Polytechnic High School, Oakland, Cal.
- Poe's Poems.** Edited by CHARLES W. KENT, Linden Kent Memorial School, University of Virginia.
- Poe's Prose Tales (Selections from).**
- Pope's Homer's Iliad.** Edited by ALBERT SMYTH, Head Professor of English Language and Literature, Central High School, Philadelphia, Pa.
- Ruskin's Sesame and Lilies, and King of the Golden River.** Edited by HERBERT E. BATES.
- Scott's Ivanhoe.** Edited by ALFRED M. HITCHCOCK.
- Scott's Lady of the Lake.** Edited by ELIZABETH A. PACKARD, Oakland, Cal.
- Scott's Lay of the Last Minstrel.** Edited by RALPH H. BOWLES.
- Scott's Marmion.** Edited by GEORGE B. AITON, State Inspector of High Schools for Minnesota.

ENGLISH CLASSICS

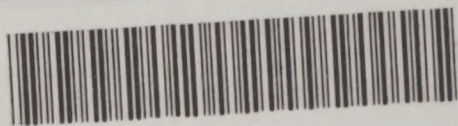
- Shakespeare's As You Like It.** Edited by CHARLES ROBERT GASTON.
- Shakespeare's Hamlet.** Edited by L. A. SHERMAN, Professor of English Literature in the University of Nebraska.
- Shakespeare's Julius Cæsar.** Edited by GEORGE W. HUFFORD and LOIS G. HUFFORD, High School, Indianapolis, Ind.
- Shakespeare's Merchant of Venice.** Edited by CHARLOTTE W. UNDERWOOD, Lewis Institute, Chicago, Ill.
- Shakespeare's Macbeth.** Edited by C. W. FRENCH.
- Shakespeare's Twelfth Night.** Edited by EDWARD P. MORTON, Assistant Professor of English in the University of Indiana.
- Shelley and Keats (Selections from).** Edited by S. C. NEWSOM.
- Southern Poets (Selections from).** Edited by W. L. WEBER, Professor of English Literature in Emory College, Oxford, Ga.
- Spenser's Faerie Queen, Book I.** Edited by GEORGE ARMSTRONG WAUCHOPE, Professor of English in the South Carolina College.
- Stevenson's Treasure Island.** Edited by H. A. VANCE, Professor of English in the University of Nashville.
- Tennyson's The Princess.** Edited by WILSON FARRAND, Newark Academy, Newark, N.J.
- Tennyson's Idylls of the King.** Edited by W. T. VLYMEN, Principal of Eastern District High School, Brooklyn, N.Y.
- Tennyson's Shorter Poems.** Edited by CHARLES READ NUTTER, Instructor in English at Harvard University; sometime Master in English at Groton School.
- John Woolman's Journal.**
- Wordsworth's Shorter Poems.** Edited by EDWARD FULTON, Assistant Professor of Rhetoric in the University of Illinois.
- Old English Ballads.** Edited by Professor WILLIAM D. ARMES, of the University of California.
- Kingsley's The Heroes.** Edited by CHARLES A. MCMURRY.
- Macaulay's Poems.** Edited by Professor FRANKLIN T. BAKER.
- Swift's Gulliver's Travels.** Edited by CLIFTON JOHNSON.
- The Arabian Nights' Entertainments.** Edited by CLIFTON JOHNSON.
- Keary's Heroes of Asgard.** Edited by CHARLES A. MCMURRY.
- Hawthorne's Grandfather's Chair.** Edited by CHARLES A. MCMURRY.
-

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

66 FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK

SEP 24 1904

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



00023158024